

Springer Theses

Recognizing Outstanding Ph.D. Research

Christopher Mark Harrison

Observational Constraints on the Influence of Active Galactic Nuclei on the Evolution of Galaxies

 Springer

Springer Theses

Recognizing Outstanding Ph.D. Research

Aims and Scope

The series “Springer Theses” brings together a selection of the very best Ph.D. theses from around the world and across the physical sciences. Nominated and endorsed by two recognized specialists, each published volume has been selected for its scientific excellence and the high impact of its contents for the pertinent field of research. For greater accessibility to non-specialists, the published versions include an extended introduction, as well as a foreword by the student’s supervisor explaining the special relevance of the work for the field. As a whole, the series will provide a valuable resource both for newcomers to the research fields described, and for other scientists seeking detailed background information on special questions. Finally, it provides an accredited documentation of the valuable contributions made by today’s younger generation of scientists.

Theses are accepted into the series by invited nomination only and must fulfill all of the following criteria

- They must be written in good English.
- The topic should fall within the confines of Chemistry, Physics, Earth Sciences, Engineering and related interdisciplinary fields such as Materials, Nanoscience, Chemical Engineering, Complex Systems and Biophysics.
- The work reported in the thesis must represent a significant scientific advance.
- If the thesis includes previously published material, permission to reproduce this must be gained from the respective copyright holder.
- They must have been examined and passed during the 12 months prior to nomination.
- Each thesis should include a foreword by the supervisor outlining the significance of its content.
- The theses should have a clearly defined structure including an introduction accessible to scientists not expert in that particular field.

More information about this series at <http://www.springer.com/series/8790>

Christopher Mark Harrison

Observational Constraints on the Influence of Active Galactic Nuclei on the Evolution of Galaxies

Doctoral Thesis accepted by
Durham University, UK

 Springer

Author

Dr. Christopher Mark Harrison
Department of Physics, Centre
for Extragalactic Astronomy
Durham University
Durham
UK

Supervisor

Prof. David Alexander
Department of Physics, Centre
for Extragalactic Astronomy
Durham University
Durham
UK

ISSN 2190-5053

Springer Theses

ISBN 978-3-319-28453-8

DOI 10.1007/978-3-319-28454-5

ISSN 2190-5061 (electronic)

ISBN 978-3-319-28454-5 (eBook)

Library of Congress Control Number: 2015959577

© Springer International Publishing Switzerland 2016

This work is subject to copyright. All rights are reserved by the Publisher, whether the whole or part of the material is concerned, specifically the rights of translation, reprinting, reuse of illustrations, recitation, broadcasting, reproduction on microfilms or in any other physical way, and transmission or information storage and retrieval, electronic adaptation, computer software, or by similar or dissimilar methodology now known or hereafter developed.

The use of general descriptive names, registered names, trademarks, service marks, etc. in this publication does not imply, even in the absence of a specific statement, that such names are exempt from the relevant protective laws and regulations and therefore free for general use.

The publisher, the authors and the editors are safe to assume that the advice and information in this book are believed to be true and accurate at the date of publication. Neither the publisher nor the authors or the editors give a warranty, express or implied, with respect to the material contained herein or for any errors or omissions that may have been made.

Printed on acid-free paper

This Springer imprint is published by SpringerNature

The registered company is Springer International Publishing AG Switzerland

Dedicated to Mum and Dad

Supervisor's Foreword

One of the key discoveries in the field of astronomy and cosmology over the past two decades is the finding that every massive galaxy in the local Universe harbours a supermassive black hole (BH) at its core. These BHs are truly colossal, with masses between one hundred thousand and ten billion times the mass of the Sun. Remarkably, observations have also shown that the mass of the BH is directly proportional to the mass of the galaxy bulge, suggesting that the growth of the BH and the galaxy bulge are somehow linked. That the BH and the galaxy bulge should be connected in any way is truly astonishing because the BH is just one billionth the physical size of the bulge, an equivalent difference in size scale between that of a grape and the Earth! Understanding this linked growth between BHs and galaxies over these vast differences in size scale is one of the main driving forces behind astronomy and cosmology today, and is the focus of Harrison's thesis.

BHs grow through the accretion of material, primarily gas, in a process that is often referred to as "feeding". When these BHs feed they become bright due to friction from the (doomed) gas in orbit around the BH and, in exceptional cases, can be so bright that they are seen out to the edges of the observable Universe. During these feeding stages they are referred to as an Active Galactic Nucleus, or an AGN. By comparison, galaxies grow due to the formation of stars from the collapse of cold gas clouds. The proportionality between the mass of the BH and the galaxy bulge therefore suggests a connection between AGN activity and star formation. The key question to address therefore becomes how can AGN activity, a small-scale process, have any influence on the formation of stars in the galaxy, a large-scale process?

The leading candidates to forge the connection between BH and galaxy bulge growth are AGN-driven winds, outflows and jets of gas (generically referred to as "outflows"). Detailed supercomputer simulations have shown that if just a fraction of the energy produced during AGN activity is injected into the galaxy, in the form of an outflow, it can be sufficient to control the formation of stars in the galaxy. Essentially, this AGN-driven outflow can be thought of as a galaxy sized arm that can shut down or regulate star formation and influence the evolution of galaxies.

The idea that AGN can drive outflows is not new or controversial. Observations of AGN for decades have provided evidence for outflows but the observational signatures have usually only provided insight into the regions very close to the BH, or the studied objects have been unusual in some way and so are not representative of the overall AGN population. A direct test of the AGN outflow model and the influence that AGN have on the evolution of galaxies requires identifying outflows over galaxy sized scales for representative samples of the AGN population.

Harrison's thesis takes a multi-pronged approach in testing the AGN outflow model using state-of-the-art observations from world-leading telescopes. The observations consisted of (1) spatially resolved spectroscopy, which allows for the identification of AGN outflows and measurements of the outflow kinematics over galaxy scales and (2) deep infrared observations, which allow for reliable measurements of the amount of ongoing star formation to assess whether any differences are seen in the amount of stars forming on the basis of the power of the AGN. The significant development of this thesis was, for the first time, to be able to place these detailed observations into the context of the overall galaxy population.

With these ground-breaking datasets, and utilizing novel data analysis techniques, Harrison showed that essentially all powerful AGN drive outflows with sufficient energy to shut down the ongoing star formation, a major advance over previous work. The estimated amount of energy that these AGN drive into galaxies are in good agreement with that predicted by the models. These observations therefore appear to suggest that the models are correct. However, interestingly, there was no clear evidence that the AGN were having a significant long-term influence on the star formation, a result in apparent contradiction with the fundamental reason for the construction of the models in the first place!

How can the models and the observations be reconciled? Harrison hypothesizes that, depending on the timescale of the BH "feeding" event, and the delay between the outflow occurring and the shut down of star formation, it may be difficult seeing the definitive evidence for the cause and effect of the outflows. Alternatively, it may be that the outflows genuinely do not have a significant impact on the evolution of galaxies, in which case the challenge laid down by Harrison's thesis is: how can we explain the survival of galaxies from this onslaught of energy injection from the AGN?

Durham, UK
December 2016

Prof. David Alexander

Preface

Just over a century has passed since the first observations of active galactic nuclei (AGN) were recorded. These objects, at the centre of galaxies, turned out to be the sites of growing super massive black holes. It has become clear that these AGN are among the most powerful energy sources in the Universe and are extremely luminous over the whole electromagnetic spectrum. For many decades these energetic phenomena were largely considered rare, yet fascinating objects to study in their own right. However, over the last quarter of a century or so, high-quality observations and theoretical work have moved AGN to the forefront of extragalactic astronomy research. Observations have now shown us that all massive galaxies are likely to have hosted AGN activity during their lifetimes. Furthermore, theoretical work now suggests that AGN activity has a profound influence on the evolution of its host galaxy and the larger scale environment that it resides in. These galaxy evolution models invoke AGN-driven galaxy-wide “feedback” processes (e.g., the expulsion of gas through outflows) in order to reproduce many of the fundamental properties of galaxies and the intergalactic medium. However, placing *observational constraints* on the influence of AGN on the evolution of galaxies remains an open area of research, with many outstanding questions. The motivation of this thesis was to use a variety of observational techniques to address this limitation and to test theoretical predictions.

In this thesis I use a technique called spatially-resolved spectroscopy (described in Chap. 2), to observe how the ionized gas in AGN-host galaxies is behaving and to search for evidence that gas is being expelled from these galaxies. I observed galaxies over a wide range of cosmic epochs; from those relatively close by to our own Milky Way, right out to the distant Universe where the galaxies are being observed as they were roughly 12 billion years ago (Chaps. 3–5). A key focus of the work in this thesis is to carefully select objects to observe those that are more typical of the overall galaxy population than previous work. An extra emphasis is placed on asking what my observations of some objects tell us about galaxies *as a whole*. The model predictions that AGN expel gas from galaxies, appears to be holding up reasonably well. However, some of the other results presented in this

thesis challenge key model predictions on the *impact* that these outflows are expected to have on the formation of stars inside these galaxies. Using far-infrared data from the *Herschel* space telescope, I measured the rate at which stars are forming in the host galaxies of some of the most powerful AGN in the Universe (Chap. 6). The simple picture that AGN suppress the formation of stars in their host galaxies, turns out to not be so simple. Towards the end of this thesis I discuss the implication of my work (Chap. 7) and the outstanding questions that are being addressed with ongoing observational projects (Chap. 8). The study of growing supermassive black holes, and their role in the formation of galaxies, continues to be an exciting and hugely active area of research.

There are many people to thank who have helped, in a variety of ways, to get my thesis to this finished state. I consider myself extremely lucky to have had Dave Alexander as my supervisor, with his infectious enthusiasm for extragalactic astronomy. Throughout the four years of my Ph.D. he provided me with excellent advice and created a number of fantastic opportunities for me to progress as a researcher. I am very appreciative of his supervising style that has allowed me to explore my own ideas, whilst drawing upon his own experience and expertise to guide me in the right direction.

There are numerous post-docs and staff who have assisted me in my training and producing the research that is presented in this thesis. Ian Smail, Alastair Edge, John Stott, Alasdair Thomson, Agnese Del Moro and all of the co-authors of my papers have been particularly helpful. Special thanks to Mark Swinbank and Jim Mullaney who have invested considerable time into teaching me a range of skills, answering my stream of questions and coping with my irritatingly fastidious work ethic. It has been a delight to work surrounded by my office mates, both past and present, and my other fellow Ph.D. students within the department. It is not possible to name them all here; however, I must acknowledge my long-standing office-mate Alice Danielson, who is not only a great scientist but also has an unrivalled ability to inspire joy, enthusiasm and a love for astronomy into everybody she meets. Any department will be lucky to have her.

I am grateful to my whole family, which has always provided me with a huge amount of encouragement. In particular, I will never find sufficient words to fully express my gratitude to my parents, who have given me their unrelenting support throughout my entire life. Finally, I feel truly blessed to have Lucy as my wife. She has shown an unbelievable amount of care, support and patience during my time as a Ph.D. student. Lucy, I love you dearly.

Declaration

The work described in this thesis was while the author was a research student under the supervision of Prof. David M. Alexander in the Department of Physics at the University of Durham. No part of this thesis has been submitted for any other degree at the University of Durham or any other university.

Portions of this work have appeared in the following papers, with sections of the content that have been updated and modified for this book edition of this thesis:

- Chapter 3: C.M. Harrison, D.M. Alexander, A.M. Swinbank, I. Smail, S. Alaghband-Zadeh, F.E. Bauer, S.C. Chapman, A. Del Moro, R.C. Hickox, R.J. Ivison, K. Menendez-Delmestre, J.R. Mullaney, N.P.H. Nesvadba, 2012, MNRAS, 426, 1073: **Energetic galaxy-wide outflows in high-redshift ultra-luminous infrared galaxies hosting AGN activity**
- Chapter 4: C.M. Harrison, D.M. Alexander, J.R. Mullaney, A.M. Swinbank, 2014, MNRAS, 441, 3306: **Kiloparsec-scale outflows are prevalent among luminous AGN: outflows and feedback in the context of the overall AGN population**
- Chapter 5: C.M. Harrison, A.P. Thomson, D.M. Alexander, F.E. Bauer, A.C. Edge, M.T. Hogan, J.R. Mullaney and A.M. Swinbank, ApJ, 800, 45: **Storm in a “Teacup”: a radio-quiet quasar with ≈ 10 kpc radio-emitting bubbles and extreme gas kinematics:**
- Chapter 6: C.M. Harrison, D.M. Alexander, J.R. Mullaney, D. Coia, V. Charmandaris, E. Daddi, H. Dannerbauer, K. Dasyra, A. Del Moro, M. Dickinson, R.C. Hickox, R.J. Ivison, J. Kartaltepe, E. Le Floch, R. Leiton, B. Magnelli, P. Popesso, E. Rovilos, D. Rosario, A.M. Swinbank, 2012, ApJL, 760:L15: **No clear submillimetre signature of suppressed star formation among X-ray luminous AGN**

The work described in Chaps. 5–8 was performed in collaboration with others (listed above). Chapter 3 is based on the results of observing proposals led by D.M. Alexander and S. Alaghband-Zadeh. Chapter 4 is based on the results of observing proposals led by J.R. Mullaney and the author. Chapter 5 is based on the results of observing proposals led by the author. The author has carried out all of the

data reduction and analysis present in this work, unless explicitly stated, with the following exceptions: (1) the data reduction of the SINFONI data in Chap. 3 (carried out by S. Alaghband-Zadeh); (2) the spectral energy distribution analysis in Chap. 3 (carried out by A. Del Moro); (3) the reduction of the *Herschel* images used in Chap. 6 (carried out by A.M. Swinbank); (4) the reduction of the radio data in Chap. 5 (carried out by A.P. Thomson); (5) the analysis of the X-ray spectrum of the Teacup AGN present in Chap. 8 (carried out by A. Del Moro and G. Lansbury). All of the text has been written by the author.

In addition to the work presented in this thesis, the author has also either worked on, or been involved in, the following work during the period of this thesis:

- J.R. Mullaney, D.M. Alexander, J. Aird, E. Bernhard, E. Daddi, A. Del Moro, M. Dickinson, D. Elbaz, C.M. Harrison, S. Juneau, D. Liu, M. Pannella, D. Rosario, P. Santini, M. Sargent, C. Schreiber, J. Simpson, F. Stanley, 2015, MNRAS, 453, L83: **ALMA and Herschel reveal that X-ray AGN and main-sequence galaxies have different star formation rate distributions**
- F. Stanley, C.M. Harrison, D.M. Alexander, A.M. Swinbank, J.A. Aird, A. Del Moro, R.C. Hickox, J.R. Mullaney, MNRAS, 2015, 453, 591: **A remarkably flat relationship between the average star formation rate and AGN luminosity for distant X-ray AGN**
- C-T.J. Chen, R.C. Hickox, S. Alberts, C.M. Harrison, D.M. Alexander, R. Assef, M.J.I. Brown, A. Del Moro, W.R. Forman, A.D. Goulding, K.N. Hainline, C. Jones, C.S. Kochanek, S.S. Murray, A. Pope, E. Rovilos, D. Stern, 2015, ApJ, 802, 50: **A connection between obscuration and star formation in luminous quasars**
- K.E.K. Coppin, J.E. Geach, O. Almaini, V. Arumugam, J.S. Dunlop, W.G. Hartley, R.J. Ivison, C.J. Simpson, D.J.B. Smith, A.M. Swinbank, A.W. Blain, N. Bourne, M. Bremer, C. Conselice, C.M. Harrison, A. Mortlock, S.C. Chapman, L.J.M. Davies, D. Farrah, A. Gibb, T. Jenness, A. Karim, K.K. Knudsen, E. Ibar, M.J. Michalowski, J.A. Peacock, D. Rigopoulou, E.I. Robson, D. Scott, J. Stevens, P.P. van der Werf, 2015, MNRAS, 446, 1293: **The SCUBA-2 Cosmology Legacy Survey: the submillimetre properties of Lyman Break Galaxies at $z = 3 - 5$**
- C.M. Harrison, 2014, IAUS, 304, 284: **The impact of AGN on their host galaxies**
- A.M. Swinbank, J.M. Simpson, Ian Smail, C.M. Harrison, J. Hodge, A. Karim, F. Walter, D.M. Alexander, W. Brandt, C. de Breuck, E. de Cunha, S.C. Chapman, K.E.K. Coppin, A.L.R. Danielson, H. Dannerbauer, R.J. Ivison, T.R. Greve, K.K. Knudsen, C. Lagos, E. Schinnerer, A. Thomson, J.L. Wardlow, A. Weiss, P. van der Werf, 2014, MNRAS, 438, 1267: **An ALMA Survey of Sub-millimetre Galaxies in the Extended Chandra Deep Field South: The Far-Infrared Properties of SMGs**
- E. Rovilos, I. Georgantopoulos, A. Akylas, J. Aird, D.M. Alexander, A. Comastri, A. Del Moro, P. Gandhi, A. Georgakakis, C.M. Harrison,

- J.R. Mullaney, 2014, MNRAS, 438, 494: **A wide search for obscured Active Galactic Nuclei using XMM-Newton and WISE**
- J.R. Mullaney, D.M. Alexander, S. Fine, A.D. Goulding, C.M. Harrison, R.C. Hickox, 2013, MNRAS, 433, 622: **Narrow-line region gas kinematics of 24, 264 optically-selected AGN: the radio connection**
 - B.D. Lehmer, A.B. Lucy, D.M. Alexander, P.N. Best, J.E. Geach, C.M. Harrison, A.E. Hornschemeier, Y. Matsuda, J.R. Mullaney, Ian Smail, D. Sobral, A.M. Swinbank, 2013, ApJL, 765, 87: **Concurrent supermassive black hole and galaxy growth in $z = 2.23$ $H\alpha$ emitters: a 100ks Chandra observation of 2QZ Cluster 1004+00 and comparisons with C-COSMOS**
 - J.M. Simpson, Ian Smail, A.M. Swinbank, D.M. Alexander, R. Auld, M. Baes, D.G. Bonfield, D.L. Clements, A. Cooray, K.E.K. Coppin, A.L.R. Danielson, A. Dariush, L. Dunne, G. de Zotti, C.M. Harrison, R. Hopwood, C. Hoyos, E. Ibar, R.J. Ivison, M.J. Jarvis, A. Lapi, S.J. Maddox, M.J. Page, D.A. Riechers, E. Valiante, P.P. van der Werf, 2012, MNRAS, 426, 3201: **The evolutionary connection between QSOs and SMGs: molecular gas in far-infrared luminous QSOs at $z \approx 2.5$**
 - S. Alaghband-Zadeh, S.C. Chapman, A.M. Swinbank, Ian Smail, C.M. Harrison, D.M. Alexander, C.M. Casey, R. Dave, D. Narayanan, Y. Tamura, H. Umehata, 2012, MNRAS, 424, 2232: **Integral field spectroscopy of $z = 2.0$ – 2.7 sub-millimetre galaxies: gas morphologies and kinematics**

Contents

1	Introduction	1
1.1	A Brief History of the Discovery of Galaxies and AGN	1
1.1.1	Galaxies	1
1.1.2	Active Galactic Nuclei	2
1.2	AGN Structure and Multi-wavelength Emission	4
1.2.1	The Growing BH	5
1.2.2	AGN Standard Model and Broad-Band Continuum SEDs	6
1.2.3	AGN Standard Model and the Emission-Line Regions	8
1.2.4	Bolometric Luminosities	10
1.3	The Census of AGN Activity	10
1.3.1	Optical/UV Surveys	10
1.3.2	X-Ray Surveys	11
1.3.3	Infrared Surveys	12
1.3.4	Radio Surveys	13
1.3.5	The AGN Demography	13
1.4	The Co-evolution of BH and Galaxy Growth	14
1.4.1	The Cosmic Space Density of BH Growth and Star Formation Are Similar	15
1.4.2	Most BH Growth Occurs in Star-Forming Galaxies	16
1.4.3	BH Masses Are Related to Galaxy Bulge Properties	18
1.5	The Influence of AGN on the Evolution of Galaxies	19
1.5.1	Matching Models to Observations: AGN to the Rescue	20
1.5.2	Outflows	23
1.5.3	The SFRs of Luminous AGN	26
1.6	Thesis Outline	26
	References	28

2	Integral Field Spectroscopy and Spectral Energy Distributions	37
2.1	Integral Field Spectroscopy	37
2.1.1	Introduction	37
2.1.2	Integral Field Spectroscopy.	38
2.1.3	The Instruments Used in This Thesis	40
2.1.4	Data Reduction	42
2.2	Spectral Energy Distributions	43
2.3	Calculation of SFRs and AGN Luminosities	45
	References	45
3	Energetic Galaxy-Wide Outflows in High-z ULIRGs Hosting AGN Activity.	47
3.1	Motivation	47
3.2	Introduction	48
3.3	Observations and Data Reduction	49
3.3.1	Target Selection	49
3.3.2	IFU Observations	51
3.3.3	Flux Calibration and Stacking.	53
3.4	Star-Formation Rates and AGN Luminosities	54
3.5	Analysis and Results	55
3.5.1	Galaxy-Integrated Spectra.	55
3.5.2	Surface Brightness, Velocity and FWHM Maps.	57
3.5.3	Regions Dominated by Narrow and Broad Emission Lines	59
3.5.4	Velocity Profiles	63
3.6	Discussion	68
3.6.1	Tracing Galaxy Dynamics, Mergers and Outflows	69
3.6.2	Outflow Properties.	71
3.7	Conclusions	78
	References	79
4	Kiloparsec Scale Outflows Are Prevalent in Luminous AGN: Outflows and Feedback in the Context of the Overall AGN Population.	83
4.1	Motivation	83
4.2	Introduction	84
4.3	Targets, Observations and Data Reduction	85
4.3.1	Target Selection	85
4.3.2	Gemini-South GMOS Observations and Data Reduction	89
4.3.3	SFRs, AGN Luminosities and the Origin of the Radio Emission	90

4.4	Velocity Definitions and Spatially Resolved Kinematics	94
4.4.1	Non-parametric Velocity Definitions	94
4.4.2	Emission-Line Profile Fitting Procedure	96
4.4.3	Velocity Maps and Velocity-Distance Profiles	99
4.5	Results	100
4.5.1	Extended Emission-Line Regions: Sizes and Morphologies	102
4.5.2	Spatially-Resolved Ionised Gas Kinematics	103
4.5.3	Outflow Properties: Estimates of Mass, Energy and Momentum	108
4.6	Discussion	110
4.6.1	What Drives the Outflows?.	110
4.6.2	What Role Do These Outflows Play in Galaxy Evolution?.	117
4.7	Conclusions	118
	References	121
5	Storm in a “Teacup”: A Radio-Quiet Quasar with ≈ 10 kpc Radio-Emitting Bubbles and Extreme Gas Kinematics.	125
5.1	Motivation	125
5.2	Introduction	126
5.3	Data Acquisition, Reduction and Analysis.	128
5.3.1	VLA Radio Data	128
5.3.2	VIMOS IFU Data	131
5.3.3	HST Imaging	133
5.4	Results and Discussion.	134
5.4.1	Summary of Source Structure	134
5.4.2	What Powers the Core Radio Emission and Outflow?	135
5.4.3	What Powers the ≈ 10 kpc Radio Bubbles?.	138
5.5	Conclusions	139
	References	139
6	No Submillimetre Signature of Star Formation Suppression Among X-Ray Luminous AGN.	143
6.1	Motivation	143
6.2	Introduction	144
6.3	Catalogues and Data	145
6.3.1	X-Ray Data	145
6.3.2	IR Data	146
6.4	Measuring Average Star Formation Rates	147
6.5	Results	149
6.5.1	Discussion	151
	References	153

- 7 Conclusions 155**
 - 7.1 The Identification and Characterisation of Galaxy-Wide Outflows in ULIRGs Hosting AGN Activity 155
 - 7.2 Galaxy-Wide Outflows in the Context of the Overall AGN Population 156
 - 7.3 Observations to Understand the Relationship Between Radio Emission and Outflows. 157
 - 7.4 Searching for Observational Evidence That Luminous AGN Suppress Star Formation. 157
 - 7.5 Overall Summary and Outstanding Issues 158
 - Reference 158

- 8 Ongoing and Future Work 159**
 - 8.1 What Physical Processes Drive the Outflows in AGN? 159
 - 8.2 What Are the Multi Gas-Phase Properties of Galaxy-Wide Outflows? 163
 - 8.3 What Is the Prevalence of Ionised Outflows in Galaxies Across Cosmic Time? 166
 - 8.4 What Impact Do Outflows Have on Galaxy Evolution? 169
 - 8.5 Final Remarks. 173
 - References 174

- Appendix A: AGN Emission Lines: Some Relevant Information and Applications 175**

- Appendix B: Assumed Cosmology 183**

- Appendix C: Acronyms 187**

- Index 191**

List of Figures

Figure 1.1	The unified AGN model	4
Figure 1.2	Schematic diagram of an AGN SED	5
Figure 1.3	BPT diagram of $z < 0.4$ SDSS sources	9
Figure 1.4	Cosmic SFR and mass accretion rate density	15
Figure 1.5	sSFR and SFR as a function of redshift for X-ray detected AGN	17
Figure 1.6	M_{BH} versus M_{bulge} for local classical bulges and elliptical galaxies	19
Figure 1.7	Schematic diagram to show how SF and AGN activity could impact upon one other	20
Figure 1.8	Schematic diagram to illustrate the two main modes of AGN feedback	22
Figure 1.9	Illustration of the epochs covered by the observations in this thesis	27
Figure 2.1	Schematic diagram of an IFU data cube	38
Figure 2.2	Summary of the main techniques of IFS	39
Figure 2.3	An example IR SED, decomposing the emission due to AGN activity and sstar formation	44
Figure 3.1	FWHM versus $[\text{O III}]\lambda 5007$ luminosity and FWHM versus 1.4 GHz luminosity for the AGN-ULIRG IFU targets	53
Figure 3.2	The IR SEDs for the AGN-ULIRG IFU targets	54
Figure 3.3	Galaxy-integrated spectra for the AGN-ULIRGs around the $[\text{O III}]\lambda\lambda 4959, 5007$ emission-line doublet	56
Figure 3.4	FWHM, velocity and surface brightness maps for the AGN-ULIRGs	60
Figure 3.5	Maps of the AGN-ULIRGs, colour-coded to highlight regions dominated by narrow or broad $[\text{O III}]$ emission lines	62
Figure 3.6	Velocity-distance profiles for the AGN-ULIRGs	66

Figure 3.7	A comparison of the emission-line widths of the AGN-ULIRGs in this work and ULIRGs from the literature	69
Figure 3.8	The projected spatial-extent of the broad [O III] emission-line regions against velocity offset with track to indicate model-derived outflow kinetic energy rates	71
Figure 3.9	A schematic diagram to illustrate a possible interpretation of the observations of the broad [O III] emission lines.	72
Figure 3.10	A comparison between the estimated coupling efficiencies required to power the outflows observed from the AGN activity and the star formation activity in the AGN-ULIRGs	75
Figure 3.11	[O III] emission-line velocity offset versus FWHM with tracks to indicate the escape velocities for a representative galaxy and dark matter halo	77
Figure 4.1	[O III] FWHM versus [O III] luminosity and radio luminosity for our type 2 AGN IFU targets compared to the overall $z < 0.2$ AGN population	86
Figure 4.2	Histograms of [O III] FWHM and radio luminosity of our type 2 AGN IFU targets compared to the overall $z < 0.2$ AGN population	89
Figure 4.3	IR SEDs for our type 2 AGN IFU targets.	92
Figure 4.4	Illustration of the different non-parametric velocity definitions used in this chapter	95
Figure 4.5	Our IFU data for an example type 2 AGN in our IFU sample (SDSS J1010+1413): velocity maps and [O III] emission-line profiles extracted from multiple spatial regions across the data cube	98
Figure 4.6	Velocity-distance profiles and SDSS image from an example type 2 AGN (J1010+1413) in our IFU sample	100
Figure 4.7	The [O III] peak signal-to-noise ratio maps for all sixteen type 2 AGN in our sample	103
Figure 4.8	Line-width maps for all sixteen type 2 AGN in our sample	107
Figure 4.9	Line-width and maximum velocity versus [O III] luminosity and radio luminosity for our type 2 AGN IFU sample and comparison samples	113
Figure 4.10	Line-width and maximum velocity versus IR luminosity from SF, AGN luminosity and q_{IR} for our type 2 AGN IFU targets and the comparison samples	114

Figure 4.11	The ratio of outflow kinetic energy rates to the AGN luminosity, SF luminosity and radio jet power for our type 2 AGN IFU targets	115
Figure 4.12	Momentum rates of the outflows in our type 2 AGN IFU targets compared to the SF luminosity and AGN luminosity.	116
Figure 5.1	Our VLA data for the Teacup AGN at three different observed-frame frequencies (1.52 GHz; 5.12 GHz; 7.26 GHz).	129
Figure 5.2	The SEDs derived from the VLA data for each of the spatial structures identified in the Teacup AGN	130
Figure 5.3	Our high-resolution VLA data for the Teacup AGN at observed-frame 6.22 GHz.	131
Figure 5.4	<i>HST</i> images for the Teacup AGN along with radio contours and [O III] emission-line profiles extract from key regions	132
Figure 5.5	A schematic diagram of the Teacup AGN to summarise the results of the data presented.	135
Figure 6.1	L_X versus redshift for X-ray AGN detected in the CDF-S, CDF-N and COSMOS fields.	146
Figure 6.2	Mean SFR versus L_X for AGN with spectroscopic redshifts in the CDF-N field	150
Figure 6.3	Mean SFR versus L_X for AGN in the CDF-N, CDF-S and COSMOS fields.	151
Figure 8.1	A comparison of the [O III] emission-line profiles of AGN and H _{II} galaxies	161
Figure 8.2	Example observations combining VLA radio data and IFU data for low- z quasars	162
Figure 8.3	Radio excess parameter versus redshift for $z < 0.4$ emission-line galaxies.	163
Figure 8.4	CO(1-0) emission-line profiles for two type 2 AGN.	165
Figure 8.5	An X-ray spectrum of the Teacup AGN obtained using <i>Swift</i> -XRT data	166
Figure 8.6	An illustration of the epochs covered by the observations in this thesis and those of future programmes	167
Figure 8.7	X-ray luminosity versus redshift for the sources being observed as part of the KASH z programme	168
Figure 8.8	Histogram of the [O III] emission-line widths for the KASH z sources.	169
Figure 8.9	Histogram of the H α emission-line widths for the KASH z sources.	170
Figure 8.10	SFR versus X-ray luminosity for ≈ 2000 AGN.	171

Figure 8.11 Example spectral energy distributions including ALMA
photometry 172

Figure 8.12 A snap-shot from a preliminary EAGLE run of a galaxy
undergoing an AGN-driven outflow 172

Figure A.1 Diagram of the O III electron sub-shells 176

Figure A.2 [O III] energy-level diagram. 177

List of Tables

Table 2.1	Summary of IFS instruments used in this thesis	40
Table 3.1	Gemini-North NIFS and VLT SINFONI observations	50
Table 3.2	Target SED data and derived properties.	52
Table 3.3	Galaxy-integrated [O III] λ 5007 emission-line properties	58
Table 3.4	Spatially integrated emission-line properties	64
Table 4.1	Targets	86
Table 4.2	Target properties	88
Table 4.3	Infrared photometric data.	91
Table 4.4	Kinematic measurements and emission-line region sizes	101
Table 5.1	Properties of radio images	128
Table 5.2	Radio properties of selected structures.	130
Table 5.3	[O III] emission-line profile properties from selected regions	133
Table 6.1	Details of the bins of X-ray AGN used for stacking Herschel data	148

Chapter 1

Introduction

The aims of this first chapter are to provide: (1) a short history of the discovery of galaxies and AGN; (2) a summary of the key properties and observations of AGN, which are thereafter referred to throughout this thesis; (3) a brief review of the current research on *the influence of active galactic nuclei on the evolution of galaxies*. Introductory material, specific to the topic being investigated, is also provided at the beginning of individual science chapters.

1.1 A Brief History of the Discovery of Galaxies and AGN

1.1.1 Galaxies

Extragalactic astronomy is not yet a century old, despite the fact that several extragalactic objects (i.e., galaxies outside of our own Milky Way) had been unknowingly catalogued, along with other “nebulous objects”, as far back as the 1780s (Messier 1781; Herschel 1786). Furthermore, whilst Thomas Wright had speculated that some of these nebulae could be distant groups of stars, outside of our own Milky Way, in the eighteenth century, it wasn’t until the early twentieth century that their extragalactic nature was confirmed. Early use of spectroscopy showed that “spiral nebulae” (the spiral shape of some nebulae was noted by Rosse 1850) were composed of stars (e.g., Huggins and Miller 1864; Scheiner 1899) with larger radial velocities than any other known astronomical objects (Slipher 1915, 1917a); however, it was by exploiting the tight luminosity-period relationship of Cepheid variable stars that lead to the definitive proof that these stellar systems are indeed separate from the Milky Way (i.e., they are extragalactic; Hubble 1925, 1929). It quickly became apparent that the Universe was full of “extragalactic nebulae” (i.e., galaxies), which exhibit a rich and diverse range of shapes and sizes (Hubble 1926). Largely thanks to the launch of the *Hubble Space Telescope (HST)* in 1990 we now know that the Universe is home to around

100 billion galaxies (this is roughly the number of Olympic-sized swimming pools that it would take to cover the surface of the Earth four-times over!). The ultimate goal for extragalactic astronomers is to understand how all of these galaxies form and evolve. Reviewing the full extent of the current knowledge of galaxy formation and evolution is way beyond the realms of this introduction. Instead the following sections focus on the fascinating objects residing at the centre of galaxies (i.e., active galactic nuclei) and the role that they are believed to play in galaxy evolution.

1.1.2 Active Galactic Nuclei

The first recorded observational evidence for the existence of (what are now referred to as) active galactic nuclei came from Edward A. Fath in 1908 who was obtaining spectra of star clusters and “spiral nebulae” at the Lick Observatory (Fath 1909). Fath noted that the spectrum of the object called NGC 1068, which was not yet known to be extragalactic (see previous section), exhibited strong emission lines; however, it was not until almost a decade later that the interesting features of the spectrum (with the unusually strong and broad high-excitation emission-line profiles) received proper attention (Slipher 1917b). Twenty five years later, the seminal work of Carl Seyfert presented analyses on the spectra of six of the twelve galaxies that had been identified as having equivalent nuclear spectra to that of NGC 1068 (Seyfert 1943). Consequently, similar objects are now called “Seyfert galaxies”. Two classes of Seyfert galaxy were eventually established: (1) “type 1”, where the permitted emission lines are significantly broader than the forbidden emission lines and (2) “type 2”, where the permitted lines and forbidden lines are of the same width (Weedman 1970; Khachikian and Weedman 1971).¹ Over the following three decades, since Seyfert (1943), the number of identified Seyfert galaxies increased dramatically and further study revealed the unusual nature of these objects: they have exceptionally compact and bright nuclear regions, and have a variable ultra violet to optical continuum, in addition to their unusually strong and broad emission lines (an early review is given by Weedman 1977). All of these observations were suggestive of a very compact powerful energy source at the centre of these galaxies.

Independently of the optical studies discussed above, during the 1960s, radio astronomers discovered a class of extremely bright radio sources that appeared to be associated with optical point sources (e.g., Matthews and Sandage 1963). These “quasi-stellar radio sources” (shortened to quasars),² turned out to have very high redshifts (z), given their considerable brightness (i.e., $z \gtrsim 0.1$; e.g., Schmidt 1963; Greenstein 1963; see Appendix B for how redshift relates to distance). Although it

¹The lines typically used were the permitted line $H\beta$ and the forbidden line $[O\ III]\lambda 5007$. Further discussion on emission lines in AGN is provided in Sect. 1.2.3 and Appendix A.

²It is now common practice to use the term “quasar” to refer to the most luminous AGN in the Universe (i.e., bolometric luminosities of $L_{AGN} \gtrsim 10^{45} \text{ erg s}^{-1}$; see Sect. 1.2.4), irrespective of their radio properties. Throughout this thesis the term quasar is used as a generic term to refer to very luminous AGN.

was a controversial idea for many years (e.g., see Weedman 1976, 1977), it eventually became apparent that these quasars were distant, more luminous versions of Seyfert galaxies. Around the same time, it was also discovered that luminous non-thermal radio emission, in the form of collimated jets and large extended structures (up to megaparsec scales), were associated with the nuclear regions of several galaxies in the nearby Universe (e.g., Baade and Minkowski 1954; Burbidge 1963). Collectively powerful radio galaxies, quasars and Seyfert galaxies are now referred to as “active galactic nuclei” (AGN), due to the luminous emission produced at the nuclei of these objects. Furthermore, these different observational classes of AGN, including the difference between Seyfert type 1 and type 2, have been unified using a single physical model (described in Sect. 1.2). There are now many other observational classifications of objects that are considered to be AGN; however, because they are not the focus of this thesis they are not reviewed here (see e.g., Antonucci 1993; Urry and Padovani 1995; Tadhunter 2008).

During the continuing discovery of AGN, it became apparent that a massive, extremely compact, powerful energy source, with the ability to form highly collimated jets was required to explain their observational characteristics. The source of this energy was heavily debated for a long time (see e.g., Saslaw 1974); however, the prevailing idea was that of mass accretion onto a supermassive black hole (BH³) (e.g., Salpeter 1964; Zeldovich and Novikov 1964; Lynden-Bell 1969; Rees 1984). A variety of evidence lead to this consensus view. Evidence for the existence of “massive dark objects” (MDOs), in the inner regions of galaxies in the local Universe was established through the collective work of many studies using the dynamical modelling of stars, emission-line gas and molecular masers (e.g., Sargent et al. 1978; Tonry 1984; Dressler and Richstone 1988; Harms et al. 1994; Miyoshi et al. 1995; see review in Kormendy and Richstone 1995). Furthermore, a comparison of the mass density of MDOs to the estimated total energy produced by AGN across cosmic time, has been used to show that these objects most likely grew through luminous mass-accretion events with a $\approx 10\%$ efficiency of mass-to-energy conversion (see Sect. 1.2.1; e.g., Soltan 1982; Marconi et al. 2004). It is now almost universally accepted that MDOs are BHs that grew through mass accretion events, during which they would have been visible as AGN. With over 80 confirmed BHs residing in local galaxies, combined with a huge amount of observational evidence from galaxy and AGN studies, it is now believed that BHs are (probably) residing inside of all massive galaxies and consequently that all of these galaxies undergo AGN activity during their lifetime (see review by Kormendy and Ho 2013). In summary, AGN were once considered rare and exotic objects but they are now believed to represent a universal episode in the evolution of all massive galaxies.

³Throughout this thesis only “supermassive” black holes are referred to; i.e., those with a mass in the range $\approx 10^5 - 10^{10} M_{\odot}$. This is in contrast to stellar mass BHs that have masses $\approx 2 - 20 M_{\odot}$ (e.g., McClintock and Remillard 2006).

1.2 AGN Structure and Multi-wavelength Emission

To assist with the understanding of the different methods of AGN identification used in this thesis, it is useful to briefly outline the currently most accepted model of the physical structure of AGN (see Fig. 1.1) and to highlight the corresponding features observed in their spectral energy distributions (SEDs; see Fig. 1.2) and spectra. It is also useful to introduce the favoured “unified” model of AGN (Antonucci 1993; Urry and Padovani 1995) that can be used to explain both the different observational classes of AGN (e.g., type 1 vs. type 2 Seyferts; see Fig. 1.1). Whilst this model does not account for all observational characteristics of AGN, and recent work has suggested small modifications are required (e.g., Nenkova et al. 2008; Elvis 2012; Bianchi et al. 2012), the major aspects of the model are still widely accepted and it is sufficient for the demonstrative purposes required here. This section uses the

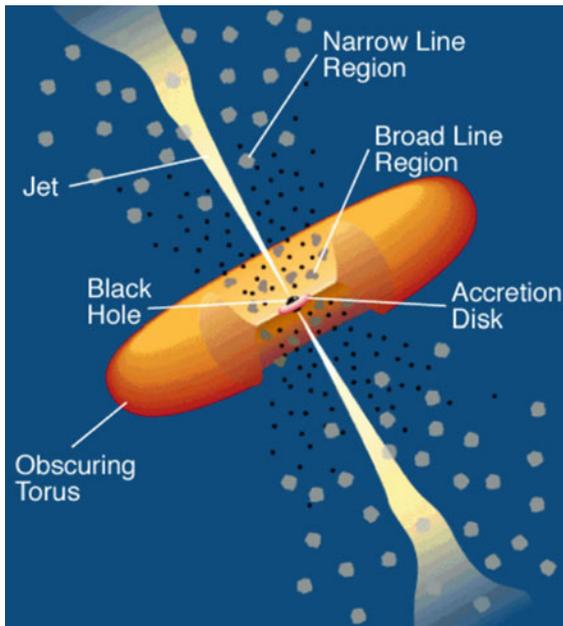


Fig. 1.1 A schematic diagram (Adapted from Urry and Padovani 1995) of the currently most accepted model of the structure of AGN. Surrounding the central BH is an accretion disk that resides inside a geometrically thick and optically thick dusty structure called the “torus”. Above and below the accretion disk is a hot corona. Two distinct emission-line regions are present: (1) the broad-line region (BLR) that is under the gravitational influence of the BH and (2) the narrow-line region (NLR) that is extended over much larger scales. Radio jets may also be launched from close to the accretion disk. The “unified model” of AGN implies that, along certain lines of sight, obscuration by the dusty torus will prevent the optical emission from the accretion disk and BLR from being observable. In contrast, observing emission from the NLR, torus and radio jets is less dependent on the line of sight

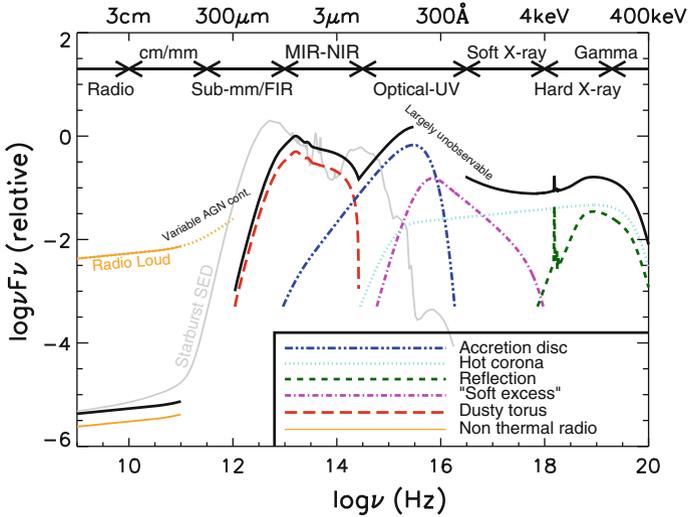


Fig. 1.2 A schematic representation of an AGN SED, loosely based on the observed SEDs of radio-quiet quasars (e.g., Elvis et al. 1994; Richards et al. 2006a). The *thick solid curve* represents the total SED and the various other curves (with an arbitrary offset) represent the individual components (see Sect. 1.2.2). The SED of an AGN in the mm—FIR regime is uncertain; however, it is widely believed to have a minimal contribution (to an overall galaxy SED) compared to star formation, except in the most intrinsically luminous quasars and powerful radio-loud AGN. The primary emission from the AGN accretion disk peaks in the UV region. Radio-loud AGN have radio emission that can be several orders of magnitude higher than radio-quiet AGN (shown with the labelled *solid line*). Also shown is an example radio—UV SED of a starburst galaxy (labelled curve; the SED is of M82 taken from the GRASIL library; Silva et al. 1998)

standard AGN physical model and unified model as a basis to describe some of the key features of AGN spectra and continuum SEDs; however, it should be noted that the exact physical processes that result in the observed emission of AGN is a topic of ongoing research and a full overview cannot be given here (instead see e.g., Koratkar and Blaes 1999; Polletta et al. 2000; Laor and Behar 2008; Vasudevan and Fabian 2009; Done et al. 2012).

1.2.1 The Growing BH

The standard physical model of an AGN (Fig. 1.1) starts with a central BH that is growing via mass accretion. The accretion luminosity is given by,

$$L_{\text{acc}} = \eta \dot{M} c^2 \quad (1.2.1)$$

where η is the mass-energy efficiency conversion (typically estimated to be ≈ 0.1 , but is dependent on the spin of the BH with an expected range of $\eta = 0.05\text{--}0.42$; e.g., Kerr 1963; Thorne 1974) and \dot{M} is the mass accretion rate. A theoretical upper limit on L_{acc} can be calculated assuming accretion of fully ionised hydrogen onto a BH of mass M_{BH} , when the force of gravity is equal to the radiation pressure from the accretion luminosity. This upper-limit is called the ‘‘Eddington luminosity’’ and has the value

$$L_{\text{Edd}} = \frac{4\pi G M_{\text{BH}} m_p c}{\sigma_T} \quad (1.2.2)$$

$$\approx 1.3 \times 10^{38} (M_{\text{BH}}/M_{\odot}) \text{ erg s}^{-1} \quad (1.2.3)$$

where m_p is the proton mass, c is the speed of light, G is the gravitational constant and σ_T is the Thomson cross-section for an electron. The ratio of the observed accretion luminosity to the Eddington luminosity (called the ‘‘Eddington ratio’’; λ_{Edd}) is a useful measure for comparing BH accretion rates over a wide range of BH masses

$$\lambda_{\text{Edd}} = L_{\text{acc}}/L_{\text{Edd}} \quad (1.2.4)$$

The term ‘‘high-accretion’’ rate AGN is often used to refer to sources with high values of λ_{Edd} (i.e., $\lambda_{\text{Edd}} \gtrsim 0.1$). The value of L_{acc} used in Eq. 1.2.4 is assumed to be the *radiative* bolometric output of the AGN (i.e., L_{AGN} ; see Eq. 1.2.5); however, it should be noted that another definition of Eddington ratio uses the combined radiative and mechanical output of the AGN (discussed more in Sect. 1.3.5; also see Best and Heckman 2012).

1.2.2 AGN Standard Model and Broad-Band Continuum SEDs

The standard AGN physical model (Fig. 1.1) is a good starting point to understand the broad-band continuum SEDs of AGN. Figure 1.2 shows a schematic representation of an AGN SED from radio frequencies to hard X-rays. The figure shows the various physical components (discussed below) that are thought to make up the overall observed SEDs of AGN; however, it should be noted that the relative contribution of these components can vary dramatically for different types of AGN. The focus of this thesis, and therefore this discussion, is on high-accretion rate AGN that emit most of their energy radiatively (sometimes called ‘‘radiatively efficient’’, ‘‘radiative mode’’ or, when referring to radio galaxies, ‘‘high excitation’’; see review in Heckman and Best 2014) and that are radio quiet.⁴ This thesis does not focus on radiatively-inefficient AGN (sometimes called ‘‘low excitation’’, ‘‘radio mode’’ or ‘‘jet mode’’)

⁴ There are multiple definitions of ‘‘radio-quiet’’ AGN (as opposed to radio-loud AGN) used throughout the literature and it is therefore useful to clarify this term here. Historically, radio-loud AGN

that emit the majority of their energy mechanically through radio jets (e.g., Merloni and Heinz 2007; McNamara and Nulsen 2012; Best and Heckman 2012; Heckman and Best 2014).

The standard AGN model has a BH surrounded by an accretion disk (Fig. 1.1). If it is assumed that this accretion disk is optically thick (e.g., Shakura and Sunyaev 1973),⁵ the resulting continuum spectrum would be thermal with a black-body temperature of $\approx 2 \times 10^5$ K that peaks in the ultra violet (UV; $\approx 10\text{--}400$ nm) for a “typical” AGN (i.e., with $M_{\text{BH}} \approx 10^8 M_{\odot}$; $\lambda_{\text{Edd}} \approx 0.1$). Indeed, AGN are often observed to have a peak in their optical—UV continuum that is referred to as the “big blue bump” (Fig. 1.2). Unfortunately, the majority of the bolometric luminosity of an AGN is thought to be in the UV, which is a region of the electromagnetic spectrum that can not easily be observed from Earth. Around the accretion disk there is thought to be an optically thin corona where the photons produced at the accretion disk undergo Compton up-scattering to produce the power-law spectrum of high-energy X-rays that are observed in AGN (Fig. 1.2). These X-ray photons may also reflect off the torus (see below) and/or the accretion disk to produce an additional “reflection” component in the X-ray region (e.g., George and Fabian 1991; see Fig. 1.2). Additionally, at soft X-ray frequencies, there is often emission observed at a level above that expected from simple accretion disk models, that is referred to as a “soft excess” component. The origin of this soft excess emission is a topic of active research (see Done et al. 2012 and references there-in).

According to the unified model, surrounding the inner regions of an AGN is a geometrically thick and optically thick dusty region, with an inner radius set by the dust sublimation temperature. In the standard model, this region has a torus shape (Fig. 1.1); however, the geometry of this structure is the subject of ongoing research and is now widely believed to be clumpy (e.g., Hönig et al. 2006; Nenkova et al. 2008). The dust in this region will be heated by absorbing the photons from the accretion disk (making the accretion disk unobservable along some lines-of-sight)

(Footnote 4 continued)

are defined as those where the ratio of 5 GHz radio luminosity ($L_{\nu}[5\text{GHz}]$) to B-band optical luminosity ($L_{\nu}[\text{B}]$) is much higher than average (i.e., $L_{\nu}[5\text{GHz}]/L_{\nu}[\text{B}] > 10$; Kellermann et al. 1989; also see Xu et al. 1999 for a definition using optical emission lines). The term “radio loud” is also sometimes used interchangeably with “radio AGN” where AGN dominate the radio emission over star formation (see Best and Heckman 2012 and references there-in). Additionally, “radio loud” is often used as a generic term to describe AGN that are particularly luminous at radio wavelengths (e.g., $L_{1.4\text{GHz}} \gtrsim 10^{25} \text{ W Hz}^{-1}$). In this thesis, “radio loud” is used to refer to sources with exceptionally high radio luminosities where the luminosity is almost certainly dominated by the AGN and “radio quiet” refers to more typical radio luminosities of $L_{1.4\text{GHz}} \lesssim 10^{24\text{--}25} \text{ W Hz}^{-1}$. The term “high-excitation” (opposite to “low-excitation”) radio AGN is used to refer to radio-identified AGN that also look like AGN based on various optical emission-line diagnostics (see Best and Heckman 2012 and references there-in; also see Sect. 1.3.5). Finally, “radio excess” AGN are defined as AGN where there is significant radio emission above that expected from star formation alone (e.g., Roy and Norris 1997; Donley et al. 2005; Del Moro et al. 2013) that could imply radio emission from an AGN.

⁵The assumption of an optically thick accretion disk may only be valid for radiatively-efficient AGN that are the focus of this thesis (see e.g., Yuan and Narayan 2014; Heckman and Best 2014 and references there-in).

and consequently this dust will re-emit thermal radiation in the infrared (IR; i.e., $\approx 1\text{--}1000\ \mu\text{m}$; e.g., Pier and Krolik 1992; Rowan-Robinson 1995; Polletta et al. 2000; see Fig. 1.2).⁶ Although the exact form of the IR emission for an AGN varies from source to source, the peak in this torus component seems to be around $\lambda \approx 20\text{--}50\ \mu\text{m}$ and has a steep fall-off at longer wavelengths (e.g., Schartmann et al. 2008; Nenkova et al. 2008; Mullaney et al. 2011; Fig. 1.2). In the sub-mm/FIR frequency range it is generally thought that, for the majority of AGN, the emission is dominated by thermal emission from cooler dust heated by the star formation in the host galaxy (e.g., Alexander et al. 2005; Mullaney et al. 2011; see review in Lutz 2014) with a minimal contribution from the AGN itself (Fig. 1.2). However, the contribution to the heating from the most luminous quasars and in radio-loud AGN can be non-negligible, particularly at $\lesssim 70\ \mu\text{m}$, and for some of the most radio-luminous AGN non-thermal emission could also be present in this part of the SED (e.g., Willott et al. 2002; Polletta et al. 2000; Tadhunter et al. 2007; Dicken et al. 2009, 2010; Hill and Shanks 2011).

The SEDs of AGN at radio frequencies are extremely diverse, with a variety of spectral slopes and several orders of magnitude difference in the radio luminosities from radio-loud compared to radio-quiet AGN (e.g., Kellermann et al. 1989; Elvis et al. 1994; Fig. 1.2). The radio emission in radio-loud AGN originates from relativistic jets, launched close to the accretion disk (Fig. 1.1), as well as emission from extended radio structures. In radio-quiet AGN the radio emission is usually more compact, and the process (or processes) that produce this emission is less certain, with possible contributions from supernovae, compact radio jets and a corona close to the accretion disk (see e.g., Smith et al. 1998; Polletta et al. 2000; Laor and Behar 2008; and references there-in).

1.2.3 AGN Standard Model and the Emission-Line Regions

The previous sub-section discussed the origin of the multi-wavelength continuum emission from an AGN (Fig. 1.2). In this sub-section the origins of the luminous emission lines observed in the spectra of AGN are briefly discussed. Some more specific details on the production mechanisms of emission lines in AGN are provided in Appendix A.

UV photons produced at the accretion disk are thought to excite dense (i.e., electron densities $n_e \gtrsim 10^8\ \text{cm}^{-3}$; Osterbrock and Ferland 2006) high velocity gas clouds that are under the direct gravitational influence of the BH. This results in the production of extremely broad permitted emission lines (typically FWHM $\approx 10^3\text{--}10^4\ \text{km s}^{-1}$; see Fig. 1.3). The region where these broad lines are produced is called the *broad-line region* (BLR; Fig. 1.1) and has a size-scale of light-days to light-months (e.g., Peterson et al. 2004). Forbidden emission lines are not observed in this region

⁶It should be noted that in a fraction of radio-loud AGN the mid-IR emission may have a significant non-thermal contribution (e.g., Dicken et al. 2008).

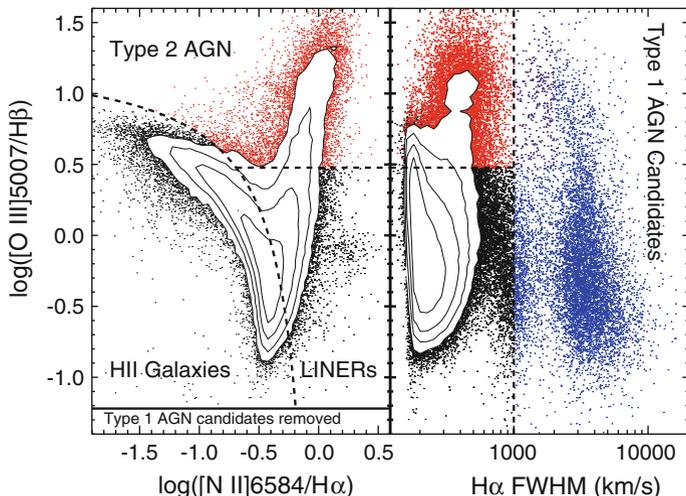


Fig. 1.3 Plots to highlight typical optical emission-line diagnostics used to identify AGN (Adapted version of Fig. 1 in Mullaney et al. 2013). All data shown are taken from the SDSS DR7 database for extragalactic sources with $z < 0.4$. *Left* Emission-line flux ratios of $[\text{O III}]\lambda 5007/\text{H}\beta$ versus $[\text{N II}]\lambda 6584/\text{H}\alpha$ for sources with $\text{FWHM}_{\text{H}\alpha} < 1000 \text{ km s}^{-1}$. The *dashed lines* are taken from Ho et al. (1997a) and Kauffmann et al. (2003) to identify different source classifications (i.e., Type 2 AGN; LINERs and H II galaxies). *Right* $[\text{O III}]\lambda 5007/\text{H}\beta$ versus $\text{FWHM}_{\text{H}\alpha}$. Broad $\text{H}\alpha$ emission-line profiles (i.e., $\text{FWHM}_{\text{H}\alpha} \gtrsim 1000 \text{ km s}^{-1}$) may indicate the presence of BLR (see Sect. 1.2.3). It is possible for reasonably broad emission lines (i.e., $1000 \text{ km s}^{-1} \lesssim \text{FWHM} \lesssim 2000 \text{ km s}^{-1}$) to be produced in the NLR due to outflows (see Sect. 1.5.2) therefore care needs to be taken when classifying AGN with these “intermediate” line widths (e.g., Mullaney et al. 2013)

due to these lines being collisionally de-excited before they can de-excite by the emission of a photon (see Appendix A for more details). The presence or absence of broad permitted emission lines in the spectra of AGN results in the optical classifications of Seyfert type 1 and type 2 respectively (as mentioned in Sect. 1.1.2). For type 2 AGN, the unified model states that no permitted emission lines are observed that are considerably broader than the observed forbidden lines because the line-of-sight to the BLR is obscured from view by the torus (Fig. 1.1).

Ionising photons that escape the central regions of the AGN can ionise gas in low-density regions that extend beyond the inner BLR (with electron densities $n_e \lesssim 10^6 \text{ cm}^{-3}$; Osterbrock and Ferland 2006; see Fig. 1.1). Here the emission lines produced have narrower widths (i.e., $250 \lesssim \text{FWHM} \lesssim 2000 \text{ km s}^{-1}$) and this region is referred to as the *narrow-line region* (NLR; Fig. 1.1). Unlike the BLR both permitted lines and forbidden lines are produced in the NLR, which can extend over large scales (i.e., $\approx 10^2\text{--}10^4 \text{ pc}$; e.g., Walker 1968; Wampler et al. 1975; Wilson and Heckman 1985; Boroson et al. 1985; Stockton and MacKenty 1987; Osterbrock 1989; Tadhunter and Tsvetanov 1989; Bennert et al. 2002; Greene et al. 2011).

1.2.4 Bolometric Luminosities

It is a common situation, as is the case in this thesis, that AGN only have measurements in a limited range of continuum wavebands and/or emission lines, whilst what is often desired is a bolometric luminosity (i.e., the total accretion luminosity that primarily emits in the optical—UV; Eq. 1.2.1; see Fig. 1.2). Therefore, using template AGN, wavelength-dependent bolometric correction factors (BC_λ) need to be applied to calculate the total accretion luminosity (L_{AGN} ; e.g., Elvis et al. 1994; Hopkins et al. 2007; Richards et al. 2006a; Lusso et al. 2010) from a single continuum waveband or emission-line luminosity (L_λ), following,

$$L_{\text{AGN}} = L_\lambda BC_\lambda. \quad (1.2.5)$$

It is important to note that the measured luminosities are often from re-processed emission (e.g., the infrared emission from the torus; see Fig. 1.2) rather than the primary emission of the AGN accretion disk. Furthermore, bolometric corrections are empirical measurements from samples of AGN, therefore they assume an “average” relative strength of the different physical components that produce the overall SEDs (see Fig. 1.2).

1.3 The Census of AGN Activity

The previous section described how AGN emit strongly across the whole range of the electromagnetic spectrum, with distinctive features in their continua (see Fig. 1.2) and spectra. It is possible to build up large samples of AGN, using a variety of observations, by exploiting these features. In this thesis a variety of approaches are used to identify AGN activity and it is therefore useful to briefly summarise different methods and describe some of their advantages and disadvantages. In addition, in this section, it is discussed how different AGN selection methods could preferentially identify AGN with different accretion properties, host galaxies properties and environments.

1.3.1 Optical/UV Surveys

The optical/UV SEDs of AGN and starburst galaxies are noticeably different (e.g., see Fig. 1.2). Therefore, for several decades, colour diagnostics have been applied to the objects detected in photometric surveys to identify AGN (Schmidt and Green 1983; Boyle et al. 1990; Richards et al. 2001). However, these methods are generally limited to the most luminous AGN (i.e., quasars) where the optical emission is unambiguously AGN-like with little-to-no contamination from stellar emission. In

contrast, optical spectroscopic surveys (e.g., the Sloan Digital Sky Survey; SDSS; York et al. 2000 and the 2dF Galaxy Redshift Survey; 2dFGRS; Colless et al. 2001) have revolutionised the study of AGN in the local Universe by identifying tens of thousands of AGN at low redshifts across a broad range of intrinsic luminosities (e.g., Ho et al. 1997b; Kauffmann et al. 2003; Schneider et al. 2005; Pâris et al. 2012). These studies make use of optical emission lines, either through the identification of extremely luminous or broad profiles (i.e., $\text{FWHM} \gtrsim 1000 \text{ km s}^{-1}$) or through emission-line ratio diagnostics (e.g., the “BPT” diagram; Baldwin et al. 1981; Fig. 1.3). These emission-line ratio diagnostics make use of the varying production of different emission-line species produced under the radiation field from an AGN, when compared to those produced under the radiation field from starlight (i.e., H II regions). The presence of strong high-excitation emission lines (e.g., [Ne V] or particularly luminous [O III]) in the spectra of a galaxy, indicates a “harder” ionising continuum (i.e., out to higher energies) than seen from stars, and therefore is likely to imply AGN activity (see Figs. 1.2 and 1.3; also see Appendix A). Emission lines are used to identify AGN in Chaps. 3 and 4 of this thesis.

Emission-line ratio diagnostics (using narrow emission lines, e.g., Fig. 1.3) have proven to be successful at identifying AGN over a range of luminosities and, under the unified model, these methods are not dependent on the line-of-sight to the accretion disk (e.g., see Fig. 1.1). These diagnostic tools are well-calibrated and used extensively to identify AGN at low redshift (i.e., $z \lesssim 0.4$); however, beyond $z \gtrsim 0.4$, the observed wavelengths of the key emission-lines (see Fig. 1.3) are redshifted into the near-IR (NIR) and it is only recently that it has become possible to begin large systematic spectroscopic surveys in this wavelength range due to the successful commissioning of high-quality NIR multi-object spectrographs (e.g., FMOS; Kimura et al. 2010; MOSFIRE; McLean et al. 2010; MMIRS; McLeod et al. 2012; KMOS; Sharples et al. 2013). Furthermore, re-calibrating these emission-line ratio diagnostic tools to be applicable for observations of galaxies at higher redshifts is an open area of research (e.g., Juneau et al. 2011; Kewley et al. 2013). Aside from the redshift limitations, the main disadvantage of this AGN identification approach is that it requires targeted spectroscopic follow-up observations of galaxies that were previously identified in photometric surveys, making it difficult to create a complete and unbiased sample of AGN.

1.3.2 X-Ray Surveys

From the early-days of X-ray observations, AGN have been found to be luminous X-ray emitters (Elvis et al. 1978) with distinctive spectral shapes (see Sect. 1.2.2 and Fig. 1.2). X-rays surveys are a successful method for identifying AGN; at luminosities of $L_{2-10 \text{ keV}} \gtrsim 10^{42} \text{ erg s}^{-1}$ AGN dominate X-ray detections (over e.g., star formation, X-ray binaries and hot gas) and at all luminosities other sources of X-rays can be isolated on the basis of different spectral slopes and X-ray—to—optical flux ratios (e.g., O’Sullivan et al. 2001; Steffen et al. 2006; Persic and Rephaeli 2007;

Lehmer et al. 2010; Wang et al. 2013). Consequently, deep blank-field X-ray surveys (e.g., Brandt et al. 2001; Giacconi et al. 2002; Alexander et al. 2003; Luo et al. 2008; Xue et al. 2011) have provided what are arguably the most uniform samples of luminous AGN to-date, particularly at high redshift (see review by Treister and Urry 2012). Chapter 6 of this thesis makes use of deep X-ray surveys to study a large sample of distant AGN.

X-ray photons (in particular those of higher energies; i.e., $\gtrsim 2$ keV) are much less sensitive to obscuration compared to optical and UV photons, which means that they can be used to observe AGN even when there is substantial material along the line of sight (e.g., Mushotzky et al. 2000; Tozzi et al. 2006) and therefore they are reasonably insensitive to inclination effects (see Fig. 1.1). However, X-ray surveys still miss the most heavily obscured sources (particularly at high column densities $N_H \gtrsim 10^{24}$ cm $^{-2}$; e.g., Treister et al. 2004; Daddi et al. 2007b; Alexander et al. 2008). Additionally, AGN have a wide range in levels of obscuration making it very challenging to obtain the *intrinsic* luminosities without data from a broad energy range (e.g., Lansbury et al. 2014). Furthermore, X-rays from AGN do not trace the majority of the accretion disk luminosity (see Fig. 1.2); therefore, there is uncertainty in the bolometric luminosities derived from X-ray fluxes over a small energy range and using average bolometric correction factors (Sect. 1.2.4).

1.3.3 Infrared Surveys

As described in Sect. 1.2.2, luminous IR emission will be emitted from warm dust that has been heated by AGN (see Fig. 1.2); therefore, observations in the IR waveband can provide useful data to identify AGN. Both star formation and AGN activity heat dust and therefore both produce infrared emission; however, the SEDs produced from these two processes are reasonably distinct (e.g., Polletta et al. 2000; Mullaney et al. 2011; see Fig. 1.2; although see caveats below). This means that mid-IR (MIR) to NIR colour diagnostics can be used to identify AGN and these methods have been used on the data from several IR photometric surveys (e.g., Lacy et al. 2004; Stern et al. 2005, 2012; Donley et al. 2008, 2012; Hickox et al. 2007; Jarrett et al. 2011; Mateos et al. 2012). MIR spectroscopy is another successful method of identifying AGN due to the characteristic continuum and the presence of high-excitation emission lines produced in this wavelength range (e.g. Weedman et al. 2005; Goulding and Alexander 2009); however, MIR spectroscopy is not used in this thesis.

Based on the unified model, IR selection of AGN should be reasonably insensitive to orientation effects as the dust emission should be visible from all viewing angles (Sect. 1.2.2; Fig. 1.2). This means that IR methods can be used to identify AGN which are missed by even the deepest X-ray surveys, presumably because even the X-rays are unable to penetrate the obscuring material (e.g., Donley et al. 2008, 2012; see Fig. 1.1). IR detection methods can also be used to identify AGN across a wide-range of redshifts (e.g., Kirkpatrick et al. 2013). However, IR-colour selected samples of AGN are non-uniform because in galaxies undergoing significant amounts

of star formation, the IR emission due to the AGN can be diluted by the thermal emission from dust heated by the star formation (e.g., Cardamone et al. 2008; Assef et al. 2013; also see Kirkpatrick et al. 2013; Fig. 1.2). A more promising avenue is multi-component SED fitting to photometric data from multiple bands at MIR–FIR wavelengths, during which the emission from star formation and AGN activity can be de-coupled (e.g., Mullaney et al. 2011). Chapters 3 and 4 make use of photometric data from IR surveys to perform SED fitting and consequently to measure AGN luminosities by de-coupling the emission due to star formation from that due to AGN activity.

1.3.4 Radio Surveys

AGN can be luminous radio emitters due to a number of different physical processes (see Sect. 1.2.2). Consequently, radio surveys (across a wide range of frequencies) have been used for decades to build up samples of AGN (e.g., Laing et al. 1983; Wall and Peacock 1985; Becker et al. 1995; Rengelink et al. 1997; Condon et al. 1998; Bock et al. 1999). Radio surveys are particularly effective at building up samples of radiatively-inefficient (aka “low excitation” or “jet mode”), radio-luminous AGN that are not easily identified using other methods (e.g., Heckman and Best 2014). Furthermore, on the basis of the “unified model”, if the radio emission is produced on scales beyond the central regions (as will be the case for extended radio jets), the identification of this radio emission should be independent of the orientation of the AGN with respect to the line of sight (see Fig. 1.1). This thesis focuses on the radiatively efficient, radio-quiet AGN population where the origin of the radio emission can be ambiguous and can easily be dominated by star formation processes (see Sect. 1.2.2). Consequently, this thesis does not make use of radio surveys to identify AGN. However, radio data are used, in combination with SED fitting, to classify some of the sources as “radio excess” AGN in Chap. 4. These “radio excess” AGN are those that have levels of radio emission significantly above that expected to be produced by the star formation that is occurring in their host galaxies (e.g., Roy and Norris 1997; Donley et al. 2005; Del Moro et al. 2013) and may indicate radio emission due to an AGN is present.

1.3.5 The AGN Demography

In the previous subsections some of the main techniques used to build up large samples of AGN were described. This sub-section briefly addresses how AGN selected using different techniques may (or may not) represent different source populations. This is particularly important for the later discussion on the impact of AGN on the evolution of galaxies (Sect. 1.5) because AGN residing in different host galaxies and environments may play very different roles in the evolution of galaxies.

It has been shown that there is a reasonable overlap between X-ray/IR and optically selected AGN (albeit with the caveats outlined in the previous sub-sections), whilst radio AGN are less frequently detected with other identification methods (e.g., Hickox et al. 2009; Trump et al. 2009; see review by Alexander and Hickox 2012 for more details). Additionally, AGN selected in X-ray, optical and IR surveys tend to reside in galaxies reasonably uniformly over a large mass range (predominantly over $M_{\star} \approx 10^9\text{--}10^{12} M_{\odot}$) that often have on-going star formation and are located in a wide range of environments (e.g., Kauffmann et al. 2003; Akiyama 2005; Hickox et al. 2009, 2011; Silverman et al. 2009; Xue et al. 2010; Mullaney et al. 2012a; Rosario et al. 2013). In contrast, the fraction of galaxies that host radio-identified AGN appears to be a strong function of mass, with the highest fractions in the most massive galaxies (i.e., $M_{\star} > 10^{11} M_{\odot}$) that have old stellar populations and reside inside the most massive dark matter halos (i.e., $M_{\text{DM}} \approx 10^{13\text{--}14} M_{\odot}$; e.g., Yee and Green 1987; Best et al. 2005; Kauffmann et al. 2008; Shen et al. 2009; Hickox et al. 2009, 2011; Tasse et al. 2008; Smolčić et al. 2011; Goulding et al. 2014). Furthermore, radio AGN appear to be predominantly radiatively inefficient with low Eddington ratios (i.e., $\lambda_{\text{Edd}} \lesssim 10^{-2}$) whilst AGN selected at other wavelengths have higher Eddington ratios (e.g., Ho 2002; Hickox et al. 2009; see review in Alexander and Hickox 2012). Radio AGN (where the radio emission is unambiguously from an AGN) are predominantly low-excitation sources (at least for $z \lesssim 0.3$ and for $L_{1.4\text{GHz}} \lesssim 10^{26} \text{WHz}^{-1}$; Heckman and Best 2014) and these sources drive the results found for radio-identified AGN described above; however, high-excitation radio AGN appear to have host-galaxy properties (e.g., colours) and Eddington ratios more in line with the “radiatively efficient” AGN identified at other wavelengths (e.g., Hardcastle et al. 2007; Smolčić 2009; Best and Heckman 2012; see review in Heckman and Best 2014).

In summary, this thesis focuses on radio-quiet AGN selected at optical and X-ray wavelengths that, as discussed above, appear to reside inside a wide range of environments and host galaxies. In particular, the focus is on luminous AGN (i.e., $L_{\text{AGN}} \gtrsim 10^{43} \text{erg s}^{-1}$) that reside inside reasonably massive galaxies ($M_{\star} \approx 10^{10\text{--}10^{12}} M_{\odot}$) and, as described below, are likely to represent the sources where the majority of BH growth occurs.

1.4 The Co-evolution of BH and Galaxy Growth

There are several observational and theoretical results that imply BH growth and galaxy growth are intimately connected, which seems incredible because there are nine orders of magnitude difference in the physical size scale of a BH and its host galaxy (equivalent to the difference between the size of a coin and the Earth!). This section explores three observational results that imply that BH growth and galaxy growth are linked: (1) the cosmic evolution of BH growth and star formation look very similar; (2) most BH growth occurs in star-forming galaxies; (3) BH masses correlate with galaxy bulge mass and velocity dispersion. Section 1.5 explores theoretical and

observational results that may imply that AGN activity (i.e., BH growth) can *directly* impact upon the evolution of their host galaxies.

1.4.1 The Cosmic Space Density of BH Growth and Star Formation Are Similar

Several pieces of observational evidence suggest that the most rapid BH growth and star formation occurred at high redshift (i.e., $z \approx 1-3$). Firstly, the average Eddington ratios of local AGN imply growth times larger than the age of the Universe and therefore these BHs must have grown much more rapidly in the past (e.g., Heckman et al. 2004; Ho 2008). Secondly, observations show that quasars (with the highest mass-accretion rates) were significantly more numerous at $z \gtrsim 1$ than at $z \lesssim 1$ (e.g., Schmidt and Green 1983; Hewett et al. 1993; Boyle et al. 2000; Richards et al. 2006b). Thirdly, the cosmic space density of BH growth peaks at $z \approx 1-2$ (Fig. 1.4) and over half of the integrated BH growth occurred around these redshifts or higher (e.g., Ueda et al. 2003; Marconi et al. 2004; Hopkins et al. 2007; Shankar et al. 2009; Aird et al. 2010), with the majority of BH growth occurring in AGN with luminosities of $L_{\text{AGN}} \approx 10^{44}-10^{46} \text{ erg s}^{-1}$ (e.g., see review by Alexander and

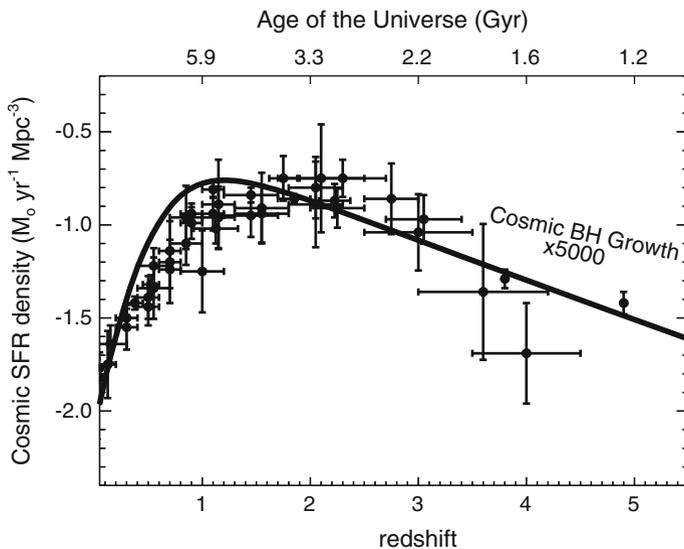


Fig. 1.4 Volume averaged cosmic SFR density as a function of redshift, where the data points are from the compilation by Madau and Dickinson (2014) (see references there-in). Also shown is a representative model to the observed evolution of cosmic BH growth (i.e., mass accretion density; curve) scaled by ≈ 5000 taken from Aird et al. (2010). The peak in the density of BH growth and star formation occurred at similar epochs (i.e., $z \approx 1-3$) and both decline towards lower redshift

Hickox 2012). Similarly to quasars, the peak space density of the most intensely star-forming galaxies is at $z \approx 2$ (Chapman et al. 2005; Wardlow et al. 2011; Simpson et al. 2014), with the peak in cosmic star formation density occurring at the same epoch (Fig. 1.4; e.g., Madau et al. 1996; Lilly et al. 1999; see review in Madau and Dickinson 2014). Studies of local galaxies have also suggested that massive galaxies (i.e., $M_\star \gtrsim 10^{10-11} M_\odot$) formed the bulk of their stars at high redshift ($z \gtrsim 1-2$; e.g., Heavens et al. 2004; Pérez-González et al. 2008). As demonstrated in Fig. 1.4, the cosmic SFR density and cosmic BH growth show remarkably similar evolution with redshift. However, while this result shows that BH growth (i.e., AGN activity) and star formation evolved in a similar manner, this only provides indirect evidence that they might be causally connected.

1.4.2 Most BH Growth Occurs in Star-Forming Galaxies

Radiatively luminous AGN (i.e., those primarily identified at optical, X-ray and infrared wavelengths; see Sect. 1.3) are preferentially located in galaxies with on-going star formation (Kauffmann et al. 2003; Alexander et al. 2005; Xue et al. 2010; Rafferty et al. 2011; Mainieri et al. 2011; Mullaney et al. 2012a; Alonso-Herrero et al. 2012; Rosario et al. 2013). Since the launch of the *Herschel* satellite, the study of the star-formation rates (SFRs) of AGN has increased greatly, largely because the far-infrared wavelength regime observed (i.e., $\lambda = 70-500 \mu\text{m}$) arguably provides the most reliable SFR tracer in luminous AGN (e.g., Mullaney et al. 2011). These studies have shown that, on average, the SFRs of X-ray selected AGN with moderate luminosities (i.e., $L_{2-10\text{keV}} \approx 10^{42}-10^{44}$ erg) are consistent with galaxies of the same mass and redshift that do not host AGN (e.g., Fig. 1.5; Mainieri et al. 2011; Santini et al. 2012; Mullaney et al. 2012a; Rovilos et al. 2012; Rosario et al. 2013). The SFRs of the most luminous AGN (i.e., $L_{2-10\text{keV}} \gtrsim 10^{44}$ erg s^{-1}) is a more controversial issue and is discussed in Sect. 1.5.

It is useful to compare the SFRs of AGN host galaxies to star-forming galaxies that do not host an AGN. Star-forming galaxies (out to $z \approx 2$), have specific SFRs (sSFRs; i.e., SFR divided by stellar mass) that increase in a well-defined form with redshift, with a reasonably small scatter (a factor of $\approx 2-3$; Fig. 1.5; e.g., Noeske et al. 2007; Daddi et al. 2007a; Rodighiero et al. 2010; Elbaz et al. 2011; see review in Lutz 2014). This evolutionary track has been dubbed the “main sequence of star formation” and it has been suggested that most star formation occurs on the main sequence (e.g., Noeske et al. 2007; Rodighiero et al. 2011). In this work the physical implications (or lack thereof) of this main sequence are not discussed; however, it provides a useful benchmark to compare AGN to the overall star-forming population of galaxies. The crucial result is that, on average, AGN appear to trace this main sequence of star formation at least for moderate luminosity AGN (i.e., $L_{2-10\text{keV}} \approx 10^{42}-10^{44}$ erg; e.g., Mullaney et al. 2012a; see Fig. 1.5).

The results described above imply that the bulk of BH growth has occurred in star-forming galaxies, and that AGN activity goes hand-in-hand with the formation

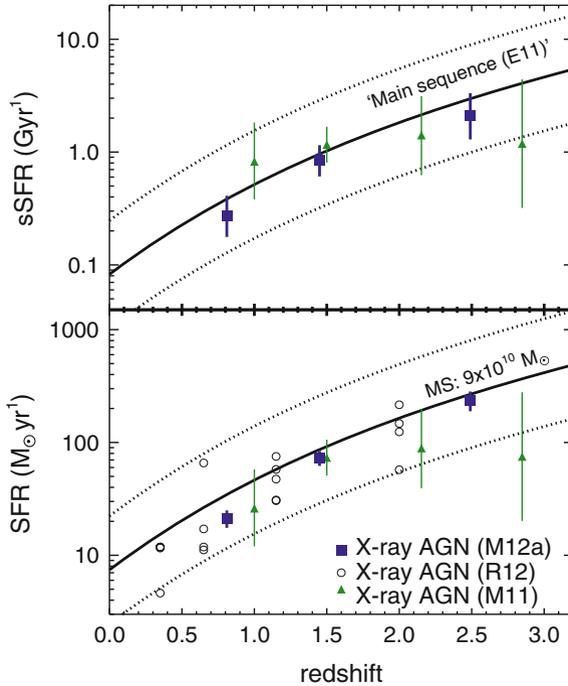


Fig. 1.5 *Upper* Average sSFR as a function of redshift for X-ray detected AGN (Mullaney et al. 2012a; M12a; Mainieri et al. 2011; M11). The *solid curve* shows the average evolution of sSFR found for star forming galaxies (i.e., the “main sequence”; Elbaz et al. 2011; E11), and the *dotted curves* show $3\times$ above and below this curve (representative of the scatter). *Lower* Average SFR as a function of redshift for X-ray detected AGN from M11, M12a and Rosario et al. (2012) (R12; SFRs from various X-ray bins are shown). * The *solid curve* represents the “main sequence of star formation” (E11) for a $9 \times 10^{10} M_{\odot}$ galaxy (the average mass of the X-ray AGN in M12a) and the *dotted curves* are $3\times$ above and below this. On average, X-ray AGN have the same average sSFRs, and trace the same evolution as, non-AGN star-forming galaxies. *For the R12 data points, the centre of each redshift bin is assumed (actual values are not provided in the paper). To match the method of M12a a conversion of $+0.2$ dex from $\nu L_{\nu}[60\mu\text{m}]$ to $L_{8-1000\mu\text{m}}$ was assumed (this is typical for the SEDs of star forming galaxies; e.g., Chary and Elbaz 2001; Kirkpatrick et al. 2013) and the relationship of Kennicutt (1998) to calculate the SFRs

of stars. However, these results do not directly imply a direct causal relationship between these two processes. Furthermore, the observational results presented here may only apply for radiatively efficient AGN with moderate luminosities (i.e., $L_{2-10\text{keV}} \approx 10^{42}-10^{44} \text{erg s}^{-1}$; see Sect. 1.3). Radiatively inefficient (radio) AGN reside in galaxies that have lower star formation rates, compared to the AGN discussed above (e.g., see review in Heckman and Best 2014). In addition, the host galaxy properties of the most luminous AGN in the Universe (i.e., $L_{2-10\text{keV}} \gtrsim 10^{44} \text{erg s}^{-1}$) is a more controversial issue, and is a key-component of this thesis; the discussion of these sources is deferred to Sect. 1.5.

1.4.3 BH Masses Are Related to Galaxy Bulge Properties

The most quoted pieces of observational evidence to argue that BH growth and galaxy growth are intimately connected, are probably the relationships between BH masses and the properties of their host galaxy bulges (or “spheroids”) in local systems. BH masses are found to be proportional to the luminosity and (“equivalently”) masses of their host galaxy bulges (e.g., Dressler 1989; Kormendy 1993; Magorrian et al. 1998; Marconi and Hunt 2003; Häring and Rix 2004; Gültekin et al. 2009⁷) and a tight relationship is also found between BH masses and the velocity dispersion of the bulge (e.g., Ferrarese and Merritt 2000; Gebhardt et al. 2000; Tremaine et al. 2002; Gültekin et al. 2009). The term “bulge” here refers to both classical bulges and elliptical galaxies (see Kormendy and Ho 2013). It should be noted that, at least in the local Universe, BH masses do not appear to correlate well with pseudobulges or galaxy disks (e.g., Greene et al. 2008, 2010; Ho 2008; Kormendy et al. 2011; see Kormendy and Ho 2013 for a comprehensive review). Figure 1.6 shows the BH–bulge mass relationship, containing data on classical bulges and ellipticals compiled from the literature (Kormendy and Ho 2013 and references there-in). This relationship is almost linear, with BH masses (M_{BH}) containing around 0.2–0.8% of the mass of their host bulges (M_{bulge}) and can be parameterised in the form:

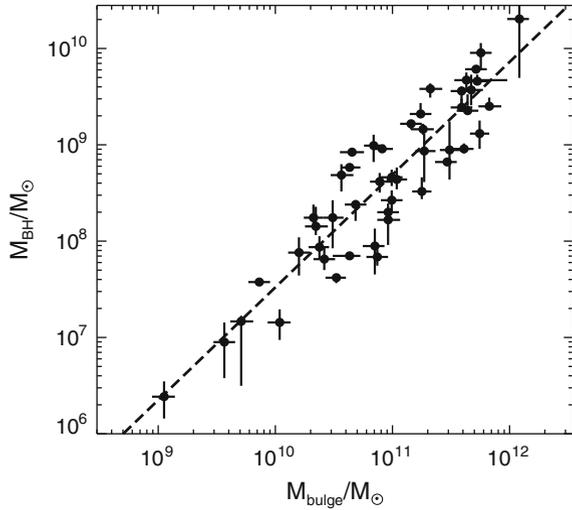
$$\frac{M_{\text{BH}}}{10^8 M_{\odot}} = (4.9^{+0.6}_{-0.5}) \left(\frac{M_{\text{bulge}}}{10^{11} M_{\odot}} \right)^{1.17 \pm 0.08}. \quad (1.4.6)$$

The remarkable implications of this relationship (Eq. 1.4.6; derived in Kormendy and Ho 2013) include: (1) a universal method to calculate the masses of BHs residing in classical bulges or ellipticals using “easy” to measure quantities (i.e., bulge luminosity or velocity dispersion); and (2) the potential interpretation of a causal link between BH growth and the formation of classical bulges and ellipticals that forged this tight relationship.

Whilst the relationship observed in Fig. 1.6 is well calibrated locally, overcoming the observational challenges of accurately measuring M_{BH} and M_{bulge} in distant galaxies is an ongoing area of research. Early indications suggest a possible evolution with redshift, where BH growth preceded or outpaced the growth of bulges, and additionally that the relationship has become tighter over time (McLure et al. 2006; Merloni et al. 2010; Bennert et al. 2011; see review in Kormendy and Ho 2013; but see Lauer et al. 2007 for possible observational biases). Finally, another interesting independent result that is useful to mention here is that, when averaging the AGN luminosities and SFRs over large populations of star forming galaxies, the estimated ratio of mass accretion rates to star formation rates comes out as $\approx 0.1\%$ out to high redshifts (Heckman et al. 2004; Rafferty et al. 2011; Mullaney et al. 2012b; Chen

⁷Measuring a bulge mass is notoriously more difficult than measuring their luminosity. Whilst it should be possible to convert between luminosity and mass in bulges (as the stars dominate both the mass and the luminosity), the appropriate choice of conversion is not trivial (see Kormendy and Ho 2013 for a discussion of this in relation to BH–bulge mass relationships).

Fig. 1.6 BH mass (M_{BH}) versus bulge mass (M_{bulge}) for the classical bulges and ellipticals used to derive the relationship between these quantities (Eq. 1.4.6 [dashed line]; Kormendy and Ho 2013 and references there-in)



et al. 2013), which is remarkably close to the observed ratio of $M_{\text{BH}}/M_{\text{bulge}}$ in local galaxies (Fig. 1.6). Although speculative, this result could imply that, on average, BHs and galaxies have grown at the required rate to be on the local $M_{\text{BH}}-M_{\text{bulge}}$ relationship over the last ≈ 10 Gyrs. However, these results do not tell us what sets this ratio, and additionally they consider the *total* galaxy growth, not just the growth of galaxy bulges and ellipticals that drive the $M_{\text{BH}}-M_{\text{bulge}}$ relationship (Fig. 1.6).

The $M_{\text{BH}}-M_{\text{bulge}}$ relationship described here is often used as observational evidence that there must be a direct interplay between AGN activity (i.e., the build up of BH mass) and star formation (i.e., the build up of stellar mass).⁸ Searching for observational evidence of a direct interplay between AGN activity and star formation is the focus of this thesis.

1.5 The Influence of AGN on the Evolution of Galaxies

The previous section summarised some of the observational evidence that AGN activity and star formation are coeval, and stated that the observed $M_{\text{BH}}-M_{\text{bulge}}$ relationship provides indirect evidence that these two processes may somehow be regulated (at least during the formation of classical bulges and ellipticals). Fundamentally, the rates of star formation and BH growth (i.e., AGN activity) in galaxies will be down to the balance between “feeding” (i.e., a supply of cold gas) and “feedback” (i.e., the prevention of the cold gas supply). A simple explanation for the co-evolution of star formation and BH growth and the observed relationships between galaxies and

⁸It has also been suggested that the $M_{\text{BH}}-M_{\text{bulge}}$ relationship may be a natural consequence of repeated mergers (e.g., Peng 2007; Jahnke and Macciò 2011).

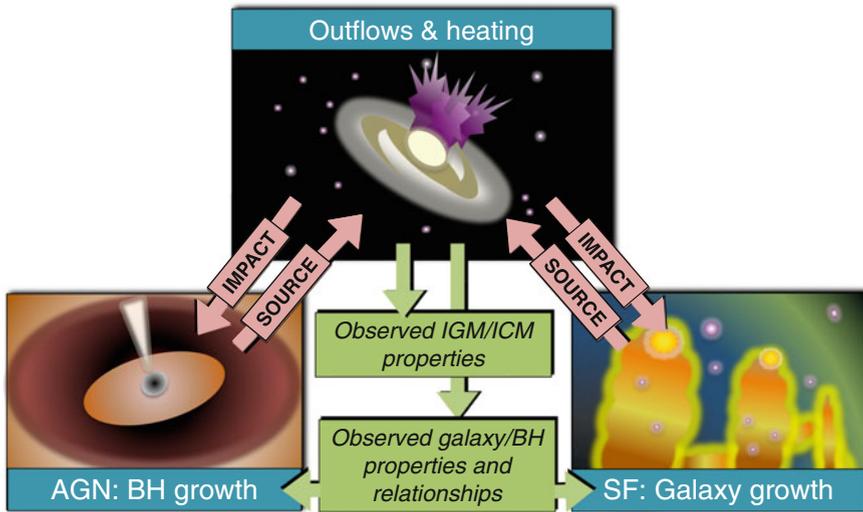


Fig. 1.7 A schematic diagram to illustrate how AGN activity (BH growth) and star formation (galaxy growth) could be connected. If either one of these processes injects energy or momentum into their surroundings (i.e., provides the *source* of heating or outflows) future AGN activity and star formation could be enhanced or suppressed (i.e., the *impact*). The overall results of these processes could affect the observed IGM properties of galaxies, BHs and the gas in the larger scale environment (i.e., the IGM and the ICM). The influence of AGN activity (i.e., AGN as the *source*) on the evolution of galaxies (i.e., constraining what *impact* they have) is the focus of this thesis

BHs, is that they grow from a common fuel supply. However, both star formation and AGN activity are known to be a source of energy and momentum (due to radiation pressure and the expulsion of material through winds or jets). If these winds, jets or radiation pressure are able to significantly suppress the supply of cold gas they will be the cause of negative “feedback” (see Fig. 1.7). Furthermore, theoretical work on galaxy formation has shown that such feedback processes are an integral part of the evolution of galaxies (see below). However, understanding the details of how, when and where these feedback processes occur is an ongoing challenge of extragalactic astronomy. Most relevant for this thesis, is an understanding of AGN feedback, which is an area of active research from both an observational and theoretical perspective (as shown by the large number of recent reviews that cover the topic: Cattaneo et al. 2009; Alexander and Hickox 2012; McNamara and Nulsen 2012; Fabian 2012; Kormendy and Ho 2013; Heckman and Best 2014). This section provides an overview of some of the theoretical and observational research on AGN feedback.

1.5.1 Matching Models to Observations: AGN to the Rescue

AGN are incredible energy sources. During the growth of a BH, huge amounts of energy can be liberated. For example, the energy released to build a BH with mass $M_{\text{BH}} = 10^8 M_{\odot}$ (via mass accretion) would correspond to $E_{\text{BH}} \approx 10^{61}$ erg, assuming

$E = 0.1M_{\text{BH}}c^2$ (i.e., a mass-to-energy conversion of 10%; see Sect. 1.1.2). This total accretion energy is two-to-three orders of magnitude higher than the binding energy of the galaxy bulge in which this BH is likely to reside (i.e., $E_{\text{BE}} \approx 10^{58}$ erg⁹) and is likely to be comparable to, or higher than, the thermal energy of the gas in the dark matter halo in which this galaxy resides (e.g., Bower et al. 2008). Therefore, if even a small fraction (i.e., ≈ 0.1 –1%) of the accretion energy could couple to the gas over 0.1–1000 kpc scales, growing BHs have the potential to regulate their own growth and the growth of their host galaxies, by preventing the supply of cold gas (i.e., by becoming a “feedback” mechanism; see above) as well as impact upon the properties of the gas in the larger scale environment by injecting material and/or energy into this gas. Indeed, theoretical models of galaxy formation have found it necessary to implement AGN feedback mechanisms, to successfully reproduce many of the fundamental properties of galaxies, the intracluster medium (ICM) and the intergalactic medium (IGM; e.g., Silk and Rees 1998; Churazov et al. 2005; Bower et al. 2006; Hopkins et al. 2006; McCarthy et al. 2010; Gaspari et al. 2011). Some specific examples of this are given below.

One of the most famous and significant theoretical results on the potential role of AGN in galaxy evolution comes from semi-analytical models, which are unable to reproduce the cut-off at the bright end of the galaxy luminosity function without energy injection from accreting BHs (e.g., Bower et al. 2006; Croton et al. 2006; Somerville et al. 2008). In these models low-accretion rate AGN, located in the quasi-hydrostatic halos of massive galaxies, efficiently suppress the cooling of hot gas through the so-called “maintenance mode” (also known as the “radio mode” or “hot halo mode”; Fig. 1.8). During this mode of feedback, the rate at which hot gas in the galaxy halos is able to cool and collapse onto the host galaxy (where it would ultimately trigger star formation and AGN activity), is maintained at a low level. This method of feedback has also been used to explain other observables such as the rates of gas cooling in galaxy clusters, the colour bi-modality of galaxies, the evolution of the cosmic star formation density and the steep X-ray luminosity-temperature (i.e., L_X - T_X) relationship seen in galaxy groups and clusters (e.g., Quilis et al. 2001; Churazov et al. 2002; Peterson et al. 2003; Bower et al. 2006, 2008; Croton et al. 2006; Bower et al. 2008; Puchwein et al. 2008; McCarthy et al. 2010).

Observational evidence for AGN heating the gas in massive halos, is found through combining X-ray and radio imaging of clusters where cavities in the X-ray emitting gas, indicating the prevention of cooling, are observed to be spatially co-incident with radio emission (e.g., Boehringer et al. 1993; Carilli et al. 1994; Rizza et al. 2000; McNamara et al. 2000; Hlavacek-Larrondo et al. 2013). Mechanical energy from the AGN, in the form of jets, inflates these cavities and is capable of exceeding the X-ray luminosities of their cooling atmospheres (e.g., Bîrzan et al. 2008; Cavagnolo et al. 2010; see McNamara and Nulsen 2012 for a review). Indeed, the rates of cooling and heating (inferred from X-ray and radio observations respectively) in radio-luminous AGN appear to be in relatively close balance in clusters (e.g. Bîrzan et al.

⁹The binding energy of $E_{\text{BE}} \approx 10^{58}$ erg is obtained assuming $M_{\text{bulge}} = 3 \times 10^{10} M_{\odot}$ (following Eq. 1.4.6) and $E_{\text{BE}} \approx M_{\text{bulge}}\sigma^2$ with $\sigma \approx 200 \text{ km s}^{-1}$.

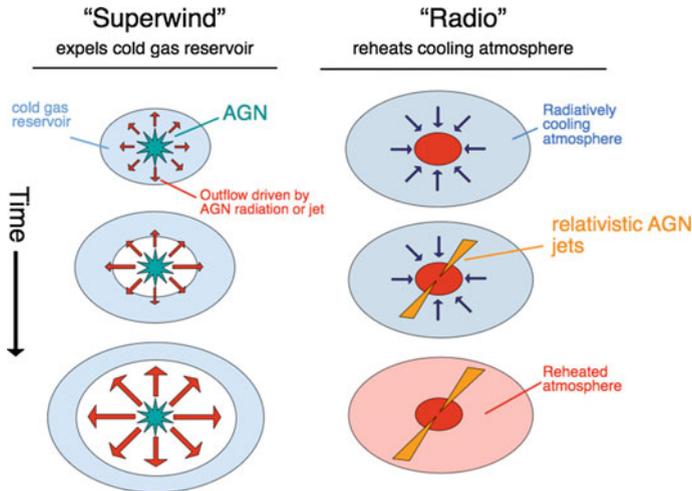


Fig. 1.8 Schematic diagram to illustrate the two main modes of AGN feedback described in this thesis (taken from Alexander and Hickox 2012; also see Bower et al. 2012). Other names for the “superwind” mode are “quasar mode” and “starburst mode”. Other names for the “radio mode” are “maintenance mode” and “hot-halo mode”

2004; Dunn and Fabian 2008) and potentially even in groups and massive elliptical galaxies out to $z \approx 1$ (Best et al. 2006; Smolčić et al. 2009; Danielson et al. 2012; Simpson et al. 2013).

The “maintenance-mode” of feedback, discussed above, is thought to be most efficient in the most massive halos, at late times and during periods of low BH accretion rates. The objects that are responsible for this type of feedback are likely to be the low-excitation radio AGN discussed in Sect. 1.3.5 (e.g., Churazov et al. 2005; Bower et al. 2006; McCarthy et al. 2011). In contrast, a more rapid/catastrophic form of interaction between AGN and their host galaxies (sometimes dubbed the “quasar mode”, “superwind mode” or “starburst mode”; see Fig. 1.8) is proposed during periods of rapid accretion (e.g., Silk and Rees 1998). Therefore, the objects that are predicted to be responsible for this type of feedback are the radiatively-efficient AGN described in Sect. 1.3.5, where the majority of BH growth occurred (Sect. 1.4). To reproduce many fundamental observables of massive galaxies and BHs, theoretical models that invoke this form of feedback typically require $\approx 0.5\text{--}15\%$ of the accretion energy to couple to the cold gas within the host galaxy and to expel this gas through outflows which ultimately results in the shut-down or suppression of future BH growth and star formation (e.g., Benson et al. 2003; Granato et al. 2004; Di Matteo et al. 2005; Springel et al. 2005; Hopkins et al. 2006, 2008a; Booth and Schaye 2010; Hopkins and Elvis 2010; Debuhr et al. 2012). In addition, analytical models have used the idea of galaxy-scale outflows, initially launched by AGN, to explain the $M_{\text{BH}}\text{--}M_{\text{bulge}}$ relationship (i.e., Fig. 1.6; e.g., Fabian 1999; Granato et al. 2004; Murray et al. 2005; King et al. 2011; Faucher-Giguère and Quataert 2012; see reviews in

Alexander and Hickox 2012 and Fabian 2012). While this form of feedback has been predicted to be effective at producing high mass outflow rates, shutting down rapid star formation episodes and producing many observables, several studies suggest that the “maintenance-mode” of feedback is still required, for example, to successfully reproduce the galaxy luminosity function (Gabor et al. 2011; McCarthy et al. 2011; Bower et al. 2012).

In addition to the potential affects of AGN feedback described above, AGN-driven outflows (in addition to supernovae and stellar winds) may be required to unbind gas from their host galaxies to fully explain the chemical enrichment of the ICM and IGM (e.g., Borgani et al. 2008; Wiersma et al. 2009; Fabjan et al. 2010; Ciotti et al. 2010). It has also been proposed that, in some cases, AGN driven outflows could induce *positive* feedback by triggering star formation episodes through induced pressure in cold gas reservoirs (e.g., Nayakshin and Zubovas 2012; Ishibashi and Fabian 2012; Silk 2013). Furthermore, *star formation* occurring in galaxy nuclei may *enhance* the level of AGN activity by driving gas towards the BH (via stellar winds); however, in contrast this star formation could *reduce* the level of AGN activity by preventing gas from reaching the BH (e.g., Wada and Norman 2002; Schartmann et al. 2009; Hobbs et al. 2011; see review by Alexander and Hickox 2012). Overall a complex picture emerges, where star formation and AGN activity could be linked by either one of these processes injecting energy and momentum into their surrounding gas and consequently enhancing or suppressing one or both of these processes (as summarised in the schematic diagram in Fig. 1.7).

Galaxy formation models have proven to be very successful at reproducing the *global* observed properties of galaxies, the ICM and the IGM. However, they often rely on diverse, simplified and artificial prescriptions when implementing AGN feedback, in particular it is not well established how the accretion energy couples to the gas to drive outflows. Observations are required to constrain the details of how, when and where these processes actually occur. This thesis studies luminous AGN (i.e., those that may be responsible for “quasar mode” feedback), searching for observational evidence that: (1) they are driving galaxy-wide outflows (i.e., the potential mechanism for AGN to influence the evolution of their host galaxies) and (2) they impact upon on the evolution of their host galaxies by suppressing star formation. The following two subsections review previous observational work that covers these two areas.

1.5.2 Outflows

While there is little doubt that star formation processes (e.g., stellar winds and supernovae) drive galaxy-wide outflows (e.g., Heckman et al. 1990; Lehnert and Heckman 1996; Swinbank et al. 2009; Genzel et al. 2011; Newman et al. 2012; Bradshaw et al. 2013; see review in Veilleux et al. 2005) and are an integral part of galaxy evolution (e.g., Dalla Vecchia and Schaye 2008; Hopkins et al. 2013a), it is believed that AGN activity is required to drive the highest velocity outflows and are particularly

important for the evolution of the most massive galaxies (e.g., Benson et al. 2003; McCarthy et al. 2011; Hopkins et al. 2013b; Zubovas and King 2014; see Sect. 1.5.1). AGN-driven outflows are initially launched from the accretion disk or dusty torus surrounding the BH, either in the form of a radio jet/lobe or a radiatively-driven wind. It is thought that these jets or winds then sweep up gas in the ISM resulting in kpc-scale “outflows” (e.g., Springel et al. 2005; King 2005; Di Matteo et al. 2005; Hopkins et al. 2006; Faucher-Giguère and Quataert 2012; Debuhr et al. 2012).

Observationally, AGN-driven winds are known to be prevalent in luminous AGN at low and high redshift: X-ray and UV absorption-line spectroscopy reveal high-velocity winds of up to $v \approx 0.1c$ (e.g., Reeves et al. 2003; Blustin et al. 2003; Trump et al. 2006; Gibson et al. 2009; Tombesi et al. 2010; Goffordet al. 2011; Page et al. 2011) and may be a ubiquitous property of all luminous AGN (Ganguly and Brotherton 2008). However, these high-velocity winds are most likely to be produced close to the accretion disk (<1 pc scale; e.g., Crenshaw et al. 2003; Tombesi et al. 2012; see Fig. 1.1). For these winds to have a global effect on the host galaxy, they must couple to the ISM and drive the gas over galaxy-wide (≈ 1 – 10 kpc) scales. To test the impact of AGN-driven outflows on the formation and evolution of galaxies, it is therefore necessary to search for kpc-scale energetic outflows.

Spatially resolved spectroscopy provides a particularly direct method to search for and characterise kpc-scale outflows. Such observations of low-redshift AGN have identified kpc-scale outflows in ionised, atomic and molecular gas (e.g., Holt et al. 2008; Feruglio et al. 2010; Fu and Stockton 2009; Rupke and Veilleux 2011; Alatalo et al. 2011; Westmoquette et al. 2012; Veilleux et al. 2013; Rupke and Veilleux 2013; Liu et al. 2013). At high redshift, most observations have concentrated on searching for galaxy-wide outflows of ionised gas (e.g., Nesvadba et al. 2006, 2007, 2008; Cano-Díaz et al. 2012), largely because this is the most practical gas phase to observe at these redshifts with current facilities. Since this thesis studies galaxy-wide ionised outflows of AGN at both low redshifts ($z < 0.2$) and high redshifts ($z = 1.4$ – 3.4), the remainder of this sub-section explains the main observational techniques used to identify galaxy-wide ionised outflows and reviews the previous work that has used these methods.

Observations of Galaxy-Wide Ionised Outflows

A diagnostic that is commonly used to identify outflowing ionised gas over large scales is broad (i.e., emission-line widths exceeding that expected from galaxy dynamics), asymmetric and high-velocity [O III] λ 5007 emission-line profiles. As a forbidden transition the [O III] λ 5007 emission line cannot be produced in the high-density sub-parsec scales of AGN BLRs, making it a good tracer of the kinematics in the NLR, and can be observed over parsecs to tens of kiloparsecs (see Sect. 1.2.3 and Appendix A for more details). The [O III] λ 5007 emission line has long been used to identify outflowing ionised gas in small samples of local and low-redshift AGN (e.g., Weedman 1970; Stockton 1976; Veron 1981; Heckman et al. 1981, 1984; Feldman et al. 1982; Vrtilik 1985; Whittle 1985; Whittle et al. 1988; Veilleux 1991; Veilleux et al. 1995; Boroson and Green 1992; Nelson and Whittle 1996); however, the small

sample sizes makes it difficult to know how representative these observations are of the overall AGN population. More recently, large systemic spectroscopic surveys (e.g., SDSS; York et al. 2000) have enabled the study of NLR kinematics in hundreds to tens of thousands of AGN (e.g., Boroson 2005; Greene and Ho 2005; Komossa et al. 2008; Zhang et al. 2011; Wang et al. 2011; Mullaney et al. 2013) to constrain both the ubiquity of these outflow features and study them as a function of key AGN properties. However, these studies have used one-dimensional spectra and therefore provide no insight on the spatial extent or structure of the outflows. To obtain spatial information of these outflows requires spatially resolved spectroscopy.

Both longslit and integral-field unit (IFU) observations of local and low-redshift AGN ($z \lesssim 0.4$), have identified disturbed and high-velocity ionised gas over kiloparsec scales (e.g., McCarthy et al. 1996; Villar-Martín et al. 1999; Colina et al. 1999; Tadhunter et al. 2001; Holt et al. 2008; Lipari et al. 2009; Lípari et al. 2009; Fu and Stockton 2009; Humphrey et al. 2010; Greene et al. 2011; Rupke and Veilleux 2011, 2013; Westmoquette et al. 2012; Husemann et al. 2013; Liu et al. 2013). Several of these studies have revealed considerable masses of outflowing gas with velocities higher than the host galaxy escape velocity, in apparent agreement with basic predictions from galaxy formation models. However, a key limitation of these studies is that it is often difficult to place the observations into the context of the overall AGN and galaxy populations as the samples are small, inhomogeneous and/or only represent the most extreme AGN or star-forming systems in the Universe. This limitation is addressed in this thesis by searching for and characterising kpc-scale outflows by using IFU observations of $z < 0.2$ AGN drawn from a well constrained parent population of optically identified AGN (Chap. 4; Harrison et al. 2014).

At high redshift, where accretion-related outflows are predicted to be most prevalent (e.g., Di Matteo et al. 2005; King 2005), IFU observations of high-redshift radio galaxies (HzRGs, at $z \approx 2-3$; Nesvadba et al. 2006, 2008) have showed that kpc-scale energetic outflows are present in at least a fraction of the high-redshift galaxy population. With implied velocities of greater than a few hundred km s^{-1} these outflows could potentially drive gas out of the host galaxy, inhibiting future BH growth and star formation. Additionally, IFU observations of the [O III] and H α emission lines in a high-redshift quasar also reveal similar outflow signatures (Cano-Díaz et al. 2012; also see Maiolino et al. 2012 for observations of the [C II] emission in another high-redshift quasar). Due to the small number of the high-redshift AGN studied with IFUs, the prevalence and significance of such galaxy-wide outflows remains poorly constrained. This limitation is addressed in this thesis by performing similar IFU observations of eight $z = 1.4-3.4$ radio-quiet AGN hosted in star-forming galaxies (Chap. 3; Harrison et al. 2012a). Importantly, the targets are much more representative of the high-redshift AGN population than HzRGs; the radio luminosities of our targets (i.e., $L_{1.4\text{ GHz}} = 10^{24}-10^{25} \text{ W Hz}^{-1}$) imply a space density of $\Phi \approx 10^{-5} \text{ Mpc}^{-3}$ compared to $\Phi \lesssim 10^{-8} \text{ Mpc}^{-3}$ for HzRGs (e.g., Willott et al. 1998; Simpson et al. 2012).

1.5.3 The SFRs of Luminous AGN

The previous sub-section explored the observational evidence for outflows in galaxies that host luminous AGN activity. However, just *detecting* outflows in AGN does not provide any evidence that AGN have a long-term impact on the evolution of their host galaxies. As discussed in Sect. 1.5.1 many theoretical models predict that the most luminous AGN suppress the star formation in their host galaxies. An obvious test of this prediction is to measure the SFRs of the host galaxies of luminous AGN.

In Sect. 1.4.2, several pieces of observational work on the SFRs of AGN were described. The general consensus presented was that, on average, galaxies hosting moderate luminosity AGN (i.e., $L_{2-10\text{keV}} \approx 10^{42-44} \text{ erg s}^{-1}$; or equivalently $L_{\text{AGN}} \approx 10^{43-45} \text{ erg s}^{-1}$) have SFRs that are consistent with those of galaxies lacking AGN but with similar masses and redshifts (also see Fig. 1.5). However, the literature presents different results for the average SFRs of galaxies that host the most luminous AGN (i.e., $L_{\text{AGN}} \gtrsim 10^{45} \text{ erg s}^{-1}$) with all possible options claimed: (1) the SFRs are *consistent* with galaxies that do not host AGN (at least for $z \approx 1-2.5$; e.g., Rosario et al. 2012); (2) the SFRs are *enhanced* compared to galaxies that host less luminous (or no) AGN (e.g., Lutz et al. 2010; Rovilos et al. 2012) and (3) the SFRs are *suppressed* compared to galaxies that host less luminous (or no) AGN (Page et al. 2012). The last of these three cases could be taken as observational evidence that luminous AGN have a direct influence on their host galaxies by suppressing star formation. Understanding the discrepancies between these results is important if we are to make a comparison to theoretical predictions. In this thesis the difference between these studies is investigated and a solution is presented in Chap. 6 (Harrison et al. 2012b).

1.6 Thesis Outline

The overall aim of this thesis is to place observational constraints on the influence of AGN on the evolution of galaxies. This is achieved using two main strategies: (1) searching for and characterising galaxy-wide ionised outflows (a potential mechanism for an AGN to influence its host galaxy) by using IFU observations, and (2) searching for evidence that luminous AGN suppress star formation by using FIR photometric data to measure the SFRs of AGN host galaxies. Additionally SED fitting methods have been developed to explore the AGN luminosities and the SFRs of the targets with IFU observations. A brief outline of the content of each chapter in this thesis is provided below. The redshift ranges that the main observing programmes cover are illustrated in Fig. 1.9.

- **Chapter 2:** This chapter gives a summary of integral field spectroscopy (the major observational technique used in this thesis) and an overview of the different instruments used in this thesis. It also gives a brief overview of the techniques used in this thesis to measure star formation rates and AGN luminosities using either stacking analyses or spectral energy distribution fitting.

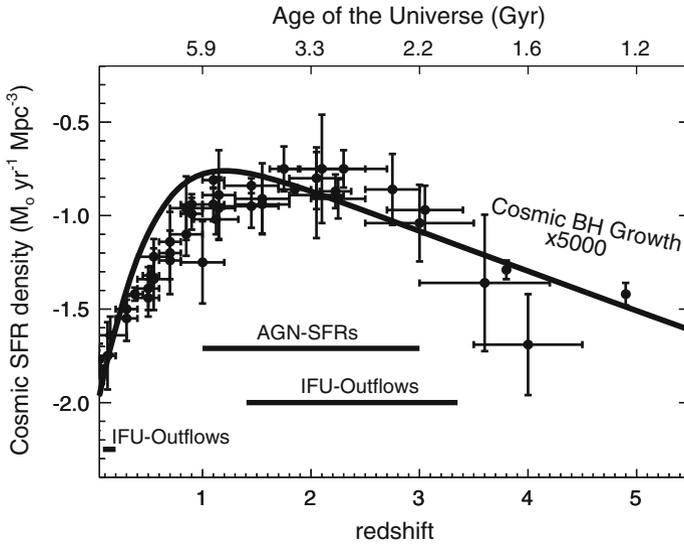


Fig. 1.9 Same as Fig. 1.4 but with the addition of *solid lines* to illustrate the redshift ranges covered by the main observing programmes presented in this thesis. In Chap. 3, IFU observations are presented of AGN that have redshifts (i.e., $z = 1.4\text{--}3.4$) that cover the peak of the cosmic SFR density. IFU observations of low redshift AGN ($z < 0.2$) are presented in Chap. 4, with detailed follow-up radio observations of one of these sources presented in Chap. 5. The low redshift observations have the advantage of increased signal-to-noise and spatial resolution and, crucially, a much better understanding of the parent population from which the targets were drawn. Chapter 6 presents SFR measurements of luminous AGN that have redshifts covering the peak epochs of cosmic star formation and BH growth. To test predictions of galaxy evolution models it is investigated if the most luminous AGN are suppressing the star formation in their host galaxies

- **Chapter 3:** This chapter uses IFU observations to search for and to characterise galaxy-wide ionised outflows in eight $z = 1.4\text{--}3.4$ ultra-luminous infrared galaxies (ULIRGs; $L_{8\text{--}1000\mu\text{m}} > 10^{12}L_{\odot}$) that host AGN activity. These galaxies are undergoing both rapid BH growth and star formation and therefore are key objects for studying the connection between AGN activity and star formation. A key development of this investigation is that it almost doubled the number of high-redshift AGN with IFU observations of this type. Additionally, the targets are radio-quiet and consequently they are much more representative of the AGN population than the radio-loud AGN that had been the focus of most of the similar previous work. The work presented here is an important test of theoretical predictions that suggest that ULIRGs hosting luminous AGN activity represent a key evolutionary phase and that these galaxies should host AGN-driven outflows capable of expelling significant fractions of gas.
- **Chapter 4:** This chapter presents IFU observations of sixteen $z < 0.2$ type 2 AGN to search for and characterise galaxy-wide outflows. This work is an important progression on the work presented in the previous chapter and other work in

the literature. The main advantage of this work is that the targets are selected from a well constrained parent sample of $\approx 24,000$ AGN, which means that the observations can be placed into the context of the overall AGN population. Outflow velocities, sizes and morphologies are measured and these properties are explored as a function of the AGN and host galaxy properties (e.g., SFR and L_{AGN}). Mass outflow rates, energetics and momentum rates are estimated and compared to theoretical predictions.

- **Chapter 5:** This chapter presents high spatial resolution VLA data of the Teacup AGN (selected from the targets presented in Chap.4), a radio-quiet quasar for which we also obtained IFU observations. This is a pilot study, on this single source, to address what powers the radio emission in radio quiet quasars and if there is any connection between the presence of high-velocity outflows and radio jets.
- **Chapter 6:** This chapter uses *Herschel* photometric data to investigate the average SFRs of AGN as a function of X-ray luminosity. Earlier published work had provided contradictory results on the SFRs of the most luminous AGN (i.e., $L_{2-10\text{keV}} \gtrsim 10^{44} \text{ erg s}^{-1}$). In particular a result presented in *Nature* claimed evidence of SFR suppression, in apparent contradiction with most earlier work. The work in this chapter presents the reasons for these contradictory results and therefore provides a clearer picture of the average SFRs of luminous AGN.
- **Chapter 7:** This chapter provides an overall summary of the work presented in this thesis along with the outstanding questions that are yet to be fully answered.
- **Chapter 8:** This chapters gives an overview of the observational and theoretical projects that have either started, or that are planned, to address some of the outstanding questions. Some of the initial new results from these programmes are also shown.
- **Appendices:** In Appendix A some relevant information and applications of the emission lines used in this thesis is provided. In Appendix B the assumed cosmological model is briefly described. Finally, Appendix C provides a list of the acronyms used in this thesis along with their definitions.

References

- Aird, J., Nandra, K., Laird, E. S., et al. 2010, MNRAS, 401, 2531
 Akiyama, M. 2005, ApJ, 629, 72
 Alatalo, K., Blitz, L., Young, L. M., et al. 2011, ApJ, 735, 88
 Alexander, D. M., Bauer, F. E., Chapman, S. C., et al. 2005, ApJ, 632, 736
 Alexander, D. M., & Hickox, R. C. 2012, New A Rev., 56, 93
 Alexander, D. M., Bauer, F. E., Brandt, W. N., et al. 2003, AJ, 126, 539
 Alexander, D. M., Chary, R.-R., Pope, A., et al. 2008, ApJ, 687, 835
 Alonso-Herrero, A., Pereira-Santaella, M., Rieke, G. H., & Rigopoulou, D. 2012, ApJ, 744, 2
 Antonucci, R. 1993, ARAA, 31, 473
 Assef, R. J., Stern, D., Kochanek, C. S., et al. 2013, ApJ, 772, 26
 Baade, W., & Minkowski, R. 1954, ApJ, 119, 215
 Baldwin, J. A., Phillips, M. M., & Terlevich, R. 1981, PASP, 93, 5

- Becker, R. H., White, R. L., & Helfand, D. J. 1995, *ApJ*, 450, 559
- Bennert, N., Falcke, H., Schulz, H., Wilson, A. S., & Wills, B. J. 2002, *ApJL*, 574, L105
- Bennert, V. N., Auger, M. W., Treu, T., Woo, J.-H., & Malkan, M. A. 2011, *ApJ*, 742, 107
- Benson, A. J., Bower, R. G., Frenk, C. S., et al. 2003, *ApJ*, 599, 38
- Best, P. N., & Heckman, T. M. 2012, *MNRAS*, 421, 1569
- Best, P. N., Kaiser, C. R., Heckman, T. M., & Kauffmann, G. 2006, *MNRAS*, 368, L67
- Best, P. N., Kauffmann, G., Heckman, T. M., et al. 2005, *MNRAS*, 362, 25
- Bianchi, S., Maiolino, R., & Risaliti, G. 2012, *Advances in Astronomy*, 2012
- Birzan, L., McNamara, B. R., Nulsen, P. E. J., Carilli, C. L., & Wise, M. W. 2008, *ApJ*, 686, 859
- Birzan, L., Rafferty, D. A., McNamara, B. R., Wise, M. W., & Nulsen, P. E. J. 2004, *ApJ*, 607, 800
- Blustin, A. J., Branduardi-Raymont, G., Behar, E., et al. 2003, *A&A*, 403, 481
- Bock, D. C.-J., Large, M. I., & Sadler, E. M. 1999, *AJ*, 117, 1578
- Boehringer, H., Voges, W., Fabian, A. C., Edge, A. C., & Neumann, D. M. 1993, *MNRAS*, 264, L25
- Booth, C. M., & Schaye, J. 2010, *MNRAS*, 405, L1
- Borgani, S., Fabjan, D., Tornatore, L., et al. 2008, *Space Sci. Rev.*, 134, 379
- Boroson, T. 2005, *AJ*, 130, 381
- Boroson, T. A., & Green, R. F. 1992, *APJS*, 80, 109
- Boroson, T. A., Persson, S. E., & Oke, J. B. 1985, *ApJ*, 293, 120
- Bower, R. G., Benson, A. J., & Crain, R. A. 2012, *MNRAS*, 422, 2816
- Bower, R. G., Benson, A. J., Malbon, R., et al. 2006, *MNRAS*, 370, 645
- Bower, R. G., McCarthy, I. G., & Benson, A. J. 2008, *MNRAS*, 390, 1399
- Boyle, B. J., Fong, R., Shanks, T., & Peterson, B. A. 1990, *MNRAS*, 243, 1
- Boyle, B. J., Shanks, T., Croom, S. M., et al. 2000, *MNRAS*, 317, 1014
- Bradshaw, E. J., Almaini, O., Hartley, W. G., et al. 2013, *MNRAS*, 433, 194
- Brandt, W. N., Alexander, D. M., Hornschemeier, A. E., et al. 2001, *AJ*, 122, 2810
- Burbridge, G. R. 1963, *Radiotekhnika*, 168
- Cano-Díaz, M., Maiolino, R., Marconi, A., et al. 2012, *A&A*, 537, L8
- Cardamone, C. N., Urry, C. M., Damen, M., et al. 2008, *ApJ*, 680, 130
- Carilli, C. L., Perley, R. A., & Harris, D. E. 1994, *MNRAS*, 270, 173
- Cattaneo, A., Faber, S. M., Binney, J., et al. 2009, *Nature*, 460, 213
- Cavagnolo, K. W., McNamara, B. R., Nulsen, P. E. J., et al. 2010, *ApJ*, 720, 1066
- Chapman, S. C., Blain, A. W., Smail, I., & Ivison, R. J. 2005, *ApJ*, 622, 772
- Chary, R., & Elbaz, D. 2001, *ApJ*, 556, 562
- Chen, C.-T. J., Hickox, R. C., Alberts, S., et al. 2013, *ApJ*, 773, 3
- Churazov, E., Sazonov, S., Sunyaev, R., et al. 2005, *MNRAS*, 363, L91
- Churazov, E., Sunyaev, R., Forman, W., & Böhringer, H. 2002, *MNRAS*, 332, 729
- Ciotti, L., Ostriker, J. P., & Proga, D. 2010, *ApJ*, 717, 708
- Colina, L., Arribas, S., & Borne, K. D. 1999, *ApJL*, 527, L13
- Colless, M., Dalton, G., Maddox, S., et al. 2001, *MNRAS*, 328, 1039
- Condon, J. J., Cotton, W. D., Greisen, E. W., et al. 1998, *AJ*, 115, 1693
- Crenshaw, D. M., Kraemer, S. B., & George, I. M. 2003, *ARAA*, 41, 117
- Croton, D. J., Springel, V., White, S. D. M., et al. 2006, *MNRAS*, 365, 11
- Daddi, E., Dickinson, M., Morrison, G., et al. 2007a, *ApJ*, 670, 156
- Daddi, E., Alexander, D. M., Dickinson, M., et al. 2007b, *ApJ*, 670, 173
- Dalla Vecchia, C., & Schaye, J. 2008, *MNRAS*, 387, 1431
- Danielson, A. L. R., Lehmer, B. D., Alexander, D. M., et al. 2012, *MNRAS*, 422, 494
- Debuhr, J., Quataert, E., & Ma, C.-P. 2012, *MNRAS*, 420, 2221
- Del Moro, A., Alexander, D. M., Mullaney, J. R., et al. 2013, *A&A*, 549, A59
- Di Matteo, T., Springel, V., & Hernquist, L. 2005, *Nature*, 433, 604
- Dicken, D., Tadhunter, C., Axon, D., et al. 2009, *ApJ*, 694, 268
- Dicken, D., Tadhunter, C., Axon, D., et al. 2010, *ApJ*, 722, 1333
- Dicken, D., Tadhunter, C., Morganti, R., et al. 2008, *ApJ*, 678, 712

- Done, C., Davis, S. W., Jin, C., Blaes, O., & Ward, M. 2012, *MNRAS*, 420, 1848
- Donley, J. L., Rieke, G. H., Pérez-González, P. G., & Barro, G. 2008, *ApJ*, 687, 111
- Donley, J. L., Rieke, G. H., Rigby, J. R., & Pérez-González, P. G. 2005, *ApJ*, 634, 169
- Donley, J. L., Koekemoer, A. M., Brusa, M., et al. 2012, *ApJ*, 748, 142
- Dressler, A. 1989, in *IAU Symposium*, Vol. 134, *Active Galactic Nuclei*, ed. D. E. Osterbrock & J. S. Miller, 217
- Dressler, A., & Richstone, D. O. 1988, *ApJ*, 324, 701
- Dunn, R. J. H., & Fabian, A. C. 2008, *MNRAS*, 385, 757
- Elbaz, D., Dickinson, M., Hwang, H. S., et al. 2011, *A&A*, 533, A119
- Elvis, M. 2012, *Journal of Physics Conference Series*, 372, 012032
- Elvis, M., Maccacaro, T., Wilson, A. S., et al. 1978, *MNRAS*, 183, 129
- Elvis, M., Wilkes, B. J., McDowell, J. C., et al. 1994, *APJS*, 95, 1
- Fabian, A. C. 1999, *MNRAS*, 308, L39
- Fabian, A. C. 2012, *ARAA*, 50, 455
- Fabjan, D., Borgani, S., Tornatore, L., et al. 2010, *MNRAS*, 401, 1670
- Fath, E. A. 1909, *Lick Observatory Bulletin*, 5, 71
- Faucher-Giguère, C.-A., & Quataert, E. 2012, *MNRAS*, 425, 605
- Feldman, F. R., Weedman, D. W., Balzano, V. A., & Ramsey, L. W. 1982, *ApJ*, 256, 427
- Ferrarese, L., & Merritt, D. 2000, *ApJL*, 539, L9
- Feruglio, C., Maiolino, R., Piconcelli, E., et al. 2010, *A&A*, 518, L155
- Fu, H., & Stockton, A. 2009, *ApJ*, 690, 953
- Gabor, J. M., Davé, R., Oppenheimer, B. D., & Finlator, K. 2011, *MNRAS*, 417, 2676
- Ganguly, R., & Brotherton, M. S. 2008, *ApJ*, 672, 102
- Gaspari, M., Melioli, C., Brighenti, F., & D'Ercole, A. 2011, *MNRAS*, 411, 349
- Gebhardt, K., Bender, R., Bower, G., et al. 2000, *ApJL*, 539, L13
- Genzel, R., Newman, S., Jones, T., et al. 2011, *ApJ*, 733, 101
- George, I. M., & Fabian, A. C. 1991, *MNRAS*, 249, 352
- Giacconi, R., Zirm, A., Wang, J., et al. 2002, *APJS*, 139, 369
- Gibson, R. R., Jiang, L., Brandt, W. N., et al. 2009, *ApJ*, 692, 758
- Gofford, J., Reeves, J. N., Turner, T. J., et al. 2011, *MNRAS*, 414, 3307
- Goulding, A. D., & Alexander, D. M. 2009, *MNRAS*, 398, 1165
- Goulding, A. D., Forman, W. R., Hickox, R. C., et al. 2014, *ApJ*, 783, 40
- Granato, G. L., De Zotti, G., Silva, L., Bressan, A., & Danese, L. 2004, *ApJ*, 600, 580
- Greene, J. E., & Ho, L. C. 2005, *ApJ*, 627, 721
- Greene, J. E., Ho, L. C., & Barth, A. J. 2008, *ApJ*, 688, 159
- Greene, J. E., Zakamska, N. L., Ho, L. C., & Barth, A. J. 2011, *ApJ*, 732, 9
- Greene, J. E., Peng, C. Y., Kim, M., et al. 2010, *ApJ*, 721, 26
- Greenstein, J. L., M. T. A. 1963, *Nature*, 197, 1041
- Gültekin, K., Richstone, D. O., Gebhardt, K., et al. 2009, *ApJ*, 698, 198
- Hardcastle, M. J., Evans, D. A., & Croston, J. H. 2007, *MNRAS*, 376, 1849
- Häring, N., & Rix, H.-W. 2004, *ApJL*, 604, L89
- Harms, R. J., Ford, H. C., Tsvetanov, Z. I., et al. 1994, *ApJL*, 435, L35
- Harrison, C. M., Alexander, D. M., Mullaney, J. R., & Swinbank, A. M. 2014, *MNRAS*, 441, 3306
- Harrison, C. M., Alexander, D. M., Swinbank, A. M., et al. 2012a, *MNRAS*, 426, 1073
- Harrison, C. M., Alexander, D. M., Mullaney, J. R., et al. 2012b, *ApJL*, 760, L15
- Heavens, A., Panter, B., Jimenez, R., & Dunlop, J. 2004, *Nature*, 428, 625
- Heckman, T., & Best, P. 2014, *ARA&A*, 52, 589
- Heckman, T. M., Armus, L., & Miley, G. K. 1990, *APJS*, 74, 833
- Heckman, T. M., Kauffmann, G., Brinchmann, J., et al. 2004, *ApJ*, 613, 109
- Heckman, T. M., Miley, G. K., & Green, R. F. 1984, *ApJ*, 281, 525
- Heckman, T. M., Miley, G. K., van Breugel, W. J. M., & Butcher, H. R. 1981, *ApJ*, 247, 403
- Herschel, W. 1786, *Royal Society of London Philosophical Transactions Series I*, 76, 457
- Hewett, P. C., Foltz, C. B., & Chaffee, F. H. 1993, *ApJL*, 406, L43

- Hickox, R. C., Jones, C., Forman, W. R., et al. 2007, *ApJ*, 671, 1365
- Hickox, R. C., Jones, C., Forman, W. R., et al. 2009, *ApJ*, 696, 891
- Hickox, R. C., Myers, A. D., Brodwin, M., et al. 2011, *ApJ*, 731, 117
- Hill, M. D., & Shanks, T. 2011, *MNRAS*, 410, 762
- Hlavacek-Larrondo, J., Allen, S. W., Taylor, G. B., et al. 2013, *ApJ*, 777, 163
- Ho, L. C. 2002, *ApJ*, 564, 120
- Ho, L. C. 2008, *ARAA*, 46, 475
- Ho, L. C., Filippenko, A. V., & Sargent, W. L. W. 1997a, *APJS*, 112, 315
- Ho, L. C., Filippenko, A. V., & Sargent, W. L. W. 1997b, *ApJ*, 487, 568
- Hobbs, A., Nayakshin, S., Power, C., & King, A. 2011, *MNRAS*, 413, 2633
- Holt, J., Tadhunter, C. N., & Morganti, R. 2008, *MNRAS*, 387, 639
- Hönig, S. F., Beckert, T., Ohnaka, K., & Weigelt, G. 2006, *A&A*, 452, 459
- Hopkins, P. F., Cox, T. J., Hernquist, L., et al. 2013a, *MNRAS*, 430, 1901
- Hopkins, P. F., & Elvis, M. 2010, *MNRAS*, 401, 7
- Hopkins, P. F., Hernquist, L., Cox, T. J., et al. 2006, *APJS*, 163, 1
- Hopkins, P. F., Hernquist, L., Cox, T. J., & Kereš, D. 2008, *APJS*, 175, 356
- Hopkins, P. F., Kereš, D., Murray, N., et al. 2013b, *MNRAS*, 433, 78
- Hopkins, P. F., Richards, G. T., & Hernquist, L. 2007, *ApJ*, 654, 731
- Hubble, E. 1929, *Proceedings of the National Academy of Science*, 15, 168
- Hubble, E. P. 1925, *Popular Astronomy*, 33, 252
- Hubble, E. P. 1926, *ApJ*, 64, 321
- Huggins, W., & Miller, W. A. 1864, *Royal Society of London Philosophical Transactions Series I*, 154, 437
- Humphrey, A., Villar-Martín, M., Sánchez, S. F., et al. 2010, *MNRAS*, 408, L1
- Husemann, B., Wisotzki, L., Sánchez, S. F., & Jahnke, K. 2013, *A&A*, 549, A43
- Ishibashi, W., & Fabian, A. C. 2012, *MNRAS*, 427, 2998
- Jahnke, K., & Macciò, A. V. 2011, *ApJ*, 734, 92
- Jarrett, T. H., Cohen, M., Masci, F., et al. 2011, *ApJ*, 735, 112
- Juneau, S., Dickinson, M., Alexander, D. M., & Salim, S. 2011, *ApJ*, 736, 104
- Kauffmann, G., Heckman, T. M., & Best, P. N. 2008, *MNRAS*, 384, 953
- Kauffmann, G., Heckman, T. M., Tremonti, C., et al. 2003, *MNRAS*, 346, 1055
- Kellermann, K. I., Sramek, R., Schmidt, M., Shaffer, D. B., & Green, R. 1989, *AJ*, 98, 1195
- Kennicutt, Jr., R. C. 1998, *ARAA*, 36, 189
- Kerr, R. P. 1963, *Phys. Rev. Lett.*, 11, 237
- Kewley, L. J., Dopita, M. A., Leitherer, C., et al. 2013, *ApJ*, 774, 100
- Khachikian, E. E., & Weedman, D. W. 1971, *Astrofizika*, 7, 389
- Kimura, M., Maihara, T., Iwamuro, F., et al. 2010, *PASJ*, 62, 1135
- King, A. 2005, *ApJL*, 635, L121
- King, A. R., Zubovas, K., & Power, C. 2011, *MNRAS*, 415, L6
- Kirkpatrick, A., Pope, A., Charmandaris, V., et al. 2013, *ApJ*, 763, 123
- Komossa, S., Xu, D., Zhou, H., Storchi-Bergmann, T., & Binette, L. 2008, *ApJ*, 680, 926
- Koratkar, A., & Blaes, O. 1999, *PASP*, 111, 1
- Kormendy, J. 1993, in *The Nearest Active Galaxies*, ed. J. Beckman, L. Colina, & H. Netzer, 197–218
- Kormendy, J., Bender, R., & Cornell, M. E. 2011, *Nature*, 469, 374
- Kormendy, J., & Ho, L. C. 2013, *ARAA*, 51, 511
- Kormendy, J., & Richstone, D. 1995, *ARAA*, 33, 581
- Lacy, M., Storrie-Lombardi, L. J., Sajina, A., et al. 2004, *ApJS*, 154, 166
- Laing, R. A., Riley, J. M., & Longair, M. S. 1983, *MNRAS*, 204, 151
- Lansbury, G. B., Alexander, D. M., Del Moro, A., et al. 2014, *ApJ*, 785, 17
- Laor, A., & Behar, E. 2008, *MNRAS*, 390, 847
- Lauer, T. R., Tremaine, S., Richstone, D., & Faber, S. M. 2007, *ApJ*, 670, 249
- Lehmer, B. D., Alexander, D. M., Bauer, F. E., et al. 2010, *ApJ*, 724, 559

- Lehnert, M. D., & Heckman, T. M. 1996, *ApJ*, 462, 651
- Lilly, S. J., Eales, S. A., Gear, W. K. P., et al. 1999, *ApJ*, 518, 641
- Lipari, S., Sanchez, S. F., Bergmann, M., et al. 2009, *MNRAS*, 392, 1295
- Lipari, S., Bergmann, M., Sanchez, S. F., et al. 2009, *MNRAS*, 398, 658
- Liu, G., Zakamska, N. L., Greene, J. E., Nesvadba, N. P. H., & Liu, X. 2013, *MNRAS*, 436, 2576
- Luo, B., Bauer, F. E., Brandt, W. N., et al. 2008, *APJS*, 179, 19
- Lusso, E., Comastri, A., Vignali, C., et al. 2010, *A&A*, 512, A34
- Lutz, D. 2014, *ARA&A*, 52, 373
- Lutz, D., Mainieri, V., Rafferty, D., et al. 2010, *ApJ*, 712, 1287
- Lynden-Bell, D. 1969, *Nature*, 223, 690
- Madau, P., & Dickinson, M. 2014, *ARA&A*, 52, 415
- Madau, P., Ferguson, H. C., Dickinson, M. E., et al. 1996, *MNRAS*, 283, 1388
- Magorrian, J., Tremaine, S., Richstone, D., et al. 1998, *AJ*, 115, 2285
- Mainieri, V., Bongiorno, A., Merloni, A., et al. 2011, *A&A*, 535, A80
- Maiolino, R., Gallerani, S., Neri, R., et al. 2012, *MNRAS*, 425, L66
- Marconi, A., & Hunt, L. K. 2003, *ApJL*, 589, L21
- Marconi, A., Risaliti, G., Gilli, R., et al. 2004, *MNRAS*, 351, 169
- Mateos, S., Alonso-Herrero, A., Carrera, F. J., et al. 2012, *MNRAS*, 426, 3271
- Matthews, T. A., & Sandage, A. R. 1963, *ApJ*, 138, 30
- McCarthy, I. G., Schaye, J., Bower, R. G., et al. 2011, *MNRAS*, 412, 1965
- McCarthy, I. G., Schaye, J., Ponman, T. J., et al. 2010, *MNRAS*, 406, 822
- McCarthy, P. J., Baum, S. A., & Spinrad, H. 1996, *APJS*, 106, 281
- McClintock, J. E., & Remillard, R. A. 2006, *Black hole binaries*, ed. W. H. G. Lewin & M. van der Klis, 157–213
- McLean, I. S., Steidel, C. C., Epps, H., et al. 2010, in *Society of Photo-Optical Instrumentation Engineers (SPIE) Conference Series*, Vol. 7735, Society of Photo-Optical Instrumentation Engineers (SPIE) Conference Series
- McLeod, B., Fabricant, D., Nystrom, G., et al. 2012, *PASP*, 124, 1318
- McLure, R. J., Jarvis, M. J., Targett, T. A., Dunlop, J. S., & Best, P. N. 2006, *MNRAS*, 368, 1395
- McNamara, B. R., & Nulsen, P. E. J. 2012, *New Journal of Physics*, 14, 055023
- McNamara, B. R., Wise, M., Nulsen, P. E. J., et al. 2000, *ApJL*, 534, L135
- Merloni, A., & Heinz, S. 2007, *MNRAS*, 381, 589
- Merloni, A., Bongiorno, A., Bolzonella, M., et al. 2010, *ApJ*, 708, 137
- Messier, C. 1781, *Catalogue des Nébuleuses & des amas d'Étoiles (Catalog of Nebulae and Star Clusters)*, Tech. rep.
- Miyoshi, M., Moran, J., Herrnstein, J., et al. 1995, *Nature*, 373, 127
- Mullaney, J. R., Alexander, D. M., Fine, S., et al. 2013, *MNRAS*, 433, 622
- Mullaney, J. R., Alexander, D. M., Goulding, A. D., & Hickox, R. C. 2011, *MNRAS*, 414, 1082
- Mullaney, J. R., Pannella, M., Daddi, E., et al. 2012a, *MNRAS*, 419, 95
- Mullaney, J. R., Daddi, E., Béthermin, M., et al. 2012b, *ApJL*, 753, L30
- Murray, N., Quataert, E., & Thompson, T. A. 2005, *ApJ*, 618, 569
- Mushotzky, R. F., Cowie, L. L., Barger, A. J., & Arnaud, K. A. 2000, *Nature*, 404, 459
- Nayakshin, S., & Zubovas, K. 2012, *MNRAS*, 427, 372
- Nelson, C. H., & Whittle, M. 1996, *ApJ*, 465, 96
- Neškova, M., Sirocky, M. M., Ivezić, Ž., & Elitzur, M. 2008, *ApJ*, 685, 147
- Nesvadba, N. P. H., Lehnert, M. D., De Breuck, C., Gilbert, A., & van Breugel, W. 2007, *A&A*, 475, 145
- Nesvadba, N. P. H., Lehnert, M. D., De Breuck, C., Gilbert, A. M., & van Breugel, W. 2008, *A&A*, 491, 407
- Nesvadba, N. P. H., Lehnert, M. D., Eisenhauer, F., et al. 2006, *ApJ*, 650, 693
- Newman, S. F., Genzel, R., Förster-Schreiber, N. M., et al. 2012, *ApJ*, 761, 43
- Noeske, K. G., Weiner, B. J., Faber, S. M., et al. 2007, *ApJL*, 660, L43

- Osterbrock, D. E. 1989, *Astrophysics of gaseous nebulae and active galactic nuclei*, ed. Osterbrock, D. E.
- Osterbrock, D. E., & Ferland, G. J. 2006, *Astrophysics of gaseous nebulae and active galactic nuclei*
- O'Sullivan, E., Forbes, D. A., & Ponman, T. J. 2001, *MNRAS*, 328, 461
- Page, M. J., Carrera, F. J., Stevens, J. A., Ebrero, J., & Blustin, A. J. 2011, *MNRAS*, 416, 2792
- Page, M. J., Symeonidis, M., Vieira, J. D., et al. 2012, *Nature*, 485, 213
- Páris, I., Petitjean, P., Aubourg, É., et al. 2012, *A&A*, 548, A66
- Peng, C. Y. 2007, *ApJ*, 671, 1098
- Pérez-González, P. G., Rieke, G. H., Villar, V., et al. 2008, *ApJ*, 675, 234
- Persic, M., & Rephaeli, Y. 2007, *A&A*, 463, 481
- Peterson, B. M., Ferrarese, L., Gilbert, K. M., et al. 2004, *ApJ*, 613, 682
- Peterson, J. R., Kahn, S. M., Paerels, F. B. S., et al. 2003, *ApJ*, 590, 207
- Pier, E. A., & Krolik, J. H. 1992, *ApJ*, 401, 99
- Polletta, M., Courvoisier, T. J.-L., Hooper, E. J., & Wilkes, B. J. 2000, *A&A*, 362, 75
- Puchwein, E., Sijacki, D., & Springel, V. 2008, *ApJL*, 687, L53
- Quilis, V., Bower, R. G., & Balogh, M. L. 2001, *MNRAS*, 328, 1091
- Rafferty, D. A., Brandt, W. N., Alexander, D. M., et al. 2011, *ApJ*, 742, 3
- Rees, M. J. 1984, *ARAA*, 22, 471
- Reeves, J. N., O'Brien, P. T., & Ward, M. J. 2003, *ApJL*, 593, L65
- Rengelink, R. B., Tang, Y., de Bruyn, A. G., et al. 1997, *AAPS*, 124, 259
- Richards, G. T., Fan, X., Schneider, D. P., et al. 2001, *AJ*, 121, 2308
- Richards, G. T., Lacy, M., Storrie-Lombardi, L. J., et al. 2006 *NaturexlabA*, *ApJs*, 166, 470
- Richards, G. T., Strauss, M. A., Fan, X., et al. 2006 *NaturexlabB*, *AJ*, 131, 2766
- Rizza, E., Loken, C., Bliton, M., et al. 2000, *AJ*, 119, 21
- Rodighiero, G., Cimatti, A., Gruppioni, C., et al. 2010, *A&A*, 518, L25
- Rodighiero, G., Daddi, E., Baronchelli, I., et al. 2011, *ApJL*, 739, L40
- Rosario, D. J., Santini, P., Lutz, D., et al. 2012, *A&A*, 545, A45
- Rosario, D. J., Santini, P., Lutz, D., et al. 2013, *ApJ*, 771, 63
- Rosse, T. E. O. 1850, *Royal Society of London Philosophical Transactions Series I*, 140, 499
- Rovilos, E., Comastri, A., Gilli, R., et al. 2012, *A&A*, 546, A58
- Rowan-Robinson, M. 1995, *MNRAS*, 272, 737
- Roy, A. L., & Norris, R. P. 1997, *MNRAS*, 289, 824
- Rupke, D. S. N., & Veilleux, S. 2011, *ApJl*, 729, L27+
- Rupke, D. S. N., & Veilleux, S. 2013, *ApJ*, 768, 75
- Salpeter, E. E. 1964, *ApJ*, 140, 796
- Santini, P., Rosario, D. J., Shao, L., et al. 2012, *A&A*, 540, A109
- Sargent, W. L. W., Young, P. J., Lynds, C. R., et al. 1978, *ApJ*, 221, 731
- Saslaw, W. C. 1974, in *IAU Symposium, Vol. 58, The Formation and Dynamics of Galaxies*, ed. J. R. Shakeshaft, 305
- Schartmann, M., Meisenheimer, K., Camenzind, M., et al. 2008, *A&A*, 482, 67
- Schartmann, M., Meisenheimer, K., Klahr, H., et al. 2009, *MNRAS*, 393, 759
- Scheiner, J. 1899, *ApJ*, 9, 149
- Schmidt, M. 1963, *Nature*, 197, 1040
- Schmidt, M., & Green, R. F. 1983, *ApJ*, 269, 352
- Schneider, D. P., Hall, P. B., Richards, G. T., et al. 2005, *AJ*, 130, 367
- Seyfert, C. K. 1943, *ApJ*, 97, 28
- Shakura, N. I., & Sunyaev, R. A. 1973, *A&A*, 24, 337
- Shankar, F., Weinberg, D. H., & Miralda-Escudé, J. 2009, *ApJ*, 690, 20
- Sharples, R., Bender, R., Agudo Berbel, A., et al. 2013, *The Messenger*, 151, 21
- Shen, Y., Strauss, M. A., Ross, N. P., et al. 2009, *ApJ*, 697, 1656
- Silk, J. 2013, *ApJ*, 772, 112
- Silk, J., & Rees, M. J. 1998, *A&A*, 331, L1
- Silva, L., Granato, G. L., Bressan, A., & Danese, L. 1998, *ApJ*, 509, 103

- Silverman, J. D., Kovač, K., Knobel, C., et al. 2009, *ApJ*, 695, 171
- Simpson, C., Westoby, P., Arumugam, V., et al. 2013, *MNRAS*, 433, 2647
- Simpson, C., Rawlings, S., Ivison, R., et al. 2012, *MNRAS*, 421, 3060
- Simpson, J., Swinbank, M., Smail, I., et al. 2014, *ApJ*, 788, 125
- Slipher, V. M. 1915, *Popular Astronomy*, 23, 21
- Slipher, V. M. 1917a, *Proceedings of the American Philosophical Society*, 56, 403
- Slipher, V. M. 1917b, *Lowell Observatory Bulletin*, 3, 59
- Smith, H. E., Lonsdale, C. J., & Lonsdale, C. J. 1998, *ApJ*, 492, 137
- Smolčić, V. 2009, *ApJL*, 699, L43
- Smolčić, V., Finoguenov, A., Zamorani, G., et al. 2011, *MNRAS*, 416, L31
- Smolčić, V., Zamorani, G., Schinnerer, E., et al. 2009, *ApJ*, 696, 24
- Soltan, A. 1982, *MNRAS*, 200, 115
- Somerville, R. S., Hopkins, P. F., Cox, T. J., Robertson, B. E., & Hernquist, L. 2008, *MNRAS*, 391, 481
- Springel, V., Di Matteo, T., & Hernquist, L. 2005, *MNRAS*, 361, 776
- Steffen, A. T., Strateva, I., Brandt, W. N., et al. 2006, *AJ*, 131, 2826
- Stern, D., Eisenhardt, P., Gorjian, V., et al. 2005, *ApJ*, 631, 163
- Stern, D., Assef, R. J., Benford, D. J., et al. 2012, *ApJ*, 753, 30
- Stockton, A. 1976, *ApJL*, 205, L113
- Stockton, A., & MacKenty, J. W. 1987, *ApJ*, 316, 584
- Swinbank, A. M., Webb, T. M., Richard, J., et al. 2009, *MNRAS*, 400, 1121
- Tadhunter, C. 2008, *New A Rev.*, 52, 227
- Tadhunter, C., & Tsvetanov, Z. 1989, *Nature*, 341, 422
- Tadhunter, C., Wills, K., Morganti, R., Oosterloo, T., & Dickson, R. 2001, *MNRAS*, 327, 227
- Tadhunter, C., Dicken, D., Holt, J., et al. 2007, *ApJ*, 661, L13
- Tasse, C., Best, P. N., Röttgering, H., & Le Borgne, D. 2008, *A&A*, 490, 893
- Thorne, K. S. 1974, *ApJ*, 191, 507
- Tombesi, F., Cappi, M., Reeves, J. N., & Braitto, V. 2012, *MNRAS*, 422, L1
- Tombesi, F., Cappi, M., Reeves, J. N., et al. 2010, *A&A*, 521, A57
- Tonry, J. L. 1984, *ApJL*, 283, L27
- Tozzi, P., Gilli, R., Mainieri, V., et al. 2006, *A&A*, 451, 457
- Treister, E., & Urry, C. M. 2012, *Advances in Astronomy*, 2012
- Treister, E., Urry, C. M., Chatzichristou, E., et al. 2004, *ApJ*, 616, 123
- Tremaine, S., Gebhardt, K., Bender, R., et al. 2002, *ApJ*, 574, 740
- Trump, J. R., Hall, P. B., Reichard, T. A., et al. 2006, *APJS*, 165, 1
- Trump, J. R., Impey, C. D., Elvis, M., et al. 2009, *ApJ*, 696, 1195
- Ueda, Y., Akiyama, M., Ohta, K., & Miyaji, T. 2003, *ApJ*, 598, 886
- Urry, C. M., & Padovani, P. 1995, *PASP*, 107, 803
- Vasudevan, R. V., & Fabian, A. C. 2009, *MNRAS*, 392, 1124
- Veilleux, S. 1991, *APJS*, 75, 383
- Veilleux, S., Cecil, G., & Bland-Hawthorn, J. 2005, *ARAA*, 43, 769
- Veilleux, S., Kim, D.-C., Sanders, D. B., Mazzarella, J. M., & Soifer, B. T. 1995, *APJS*, 98, 171
- Veilleux, S., Meléndez, M., Sturm, E., et al. 2013, *ApJ*, 776, 27
- Veron, M. P. 1981, *A&A*, 100, 12
- Villar-Martín, M., Fosbury, R. A. E., Binette, L., Tadhunter, C. N., & Rocca-Volmerange, B. 1999, *A&A*, 351, 47
- Vrtilek, J. M. 1985, *ApJ*, 294, 121
- Wada, K., & Norman, C. A. 2002, *ApJL*, 566, L21
- Walker, M. F. 1968, *ApJ*, 151, 71
- Wall, J. V., & Peacock, J. A. 1985, *MNRAS*, 216, 173
- Wampler, E. J., Burbidge, E. M., Baldwin, J. A., & Robinson, L. B. 1975, *ApJL*, 198, L49
- Wang, J., Mao, Y. F., & Wei, J. Y. 2011, *ApJ*, 741, 50
- Wang, S. X., Brandt, W. N., Luo, B., et al. 2013, *ApJ*, 778, 179

- Wardlow, J. L., Smail, I., Coppin, K. E. K., et al. 2011, MNRAS, 415, 1479
- Weedman, D. W. 1970, ApJ, 159, 405
- Weedman, D. W. 1976, QJRAS, 17, 227
- Weedman, D. W. 1977, ARAA, 15, 69
- Weedman, D. W., Hao, L., Higdon, S. J. U., et al. 2005, ApJ, 633, 706
- Westmoquette, M. S., Clements, D. L., Bendo, G. J., & Khan, S. A. 2012, MNRAS, 424, 416
- Whittle, M. 1985, MNRAS, 213, 1
- Whittle, M., Pedlar, A., Meurs, E. J. A., et al. 1988, ApJ, 326, 125
- Wiersma, R. P. C., Schaye, J., Theuns, T., Dalla Vecchia, C., & Tornatore, L. 2009, MNRAS, 399, 574
- Willott, C. J., Rawlings, S., Archibald, E. N., & Dunlop, J. S. 2002, MNRAS, 331, 435
- Willott, C. J., Rawlings, S., Blundell, K. M., & Lacy, M. 1998, MNRAS, 300, 625
- Wilson, A. S., & Heckman, T. M. 1985, in *Astrophysics of Active Galaxies and Quasi-Stellar Objects*, ed. J. S. Miller, 39–109
- Xu, C., Livio, M., & Baum, S. 1999, AJ, 118, 1169
- Xue, Y. Q., Brandt, W. N., Luo, B., et al. 2010, ApJ, 720, 368
- Xue, Y. Q., Luo, B., Brandt, W. N., et al. 2011, APJS, 195, 10
- Yee, H. K. C., & Green, R. F. 1987, ApJ, 319, 28
- York, D. G., Adelman, J., Anderson, Jr., J. E., et al. 2000, AJ, 120, 1579
- Yuan, F., & Narayan, R. 2014, ARA&A, 52, 529
- Zeldovich, Y. B., & Novikov, I. D. 1964, Dokl. Acad. Nauk.SSSR, 158, 811
- Zhang, K., Dong, X.-B., Wang, T.-G., & Gaskell, C. M. 2011, ApJ, 737, 71
- Zubovas, K., & King, A. 2014, MNRAS, 439, 400

Chapter 2

Integral Field Spectroscopy and Spectral Energy Distributions

A large fraction of this thesis is based on spatially resolved spectroscopy data that were obtained using an observational technique called integral field spectroscopy. These data are used to trace the ionised gas kinematics over kiloparsec scales in the objects studied in Chaps. 3, 4 and 5. This first section of this chapter gives brief details of how integral field spectroscopy works, the instruments used in this thesis and the basic steps required to reduce integral field spectroscopy data. The other main techniques used in this thesis make use of infrared photometric data, either by stacking or fitting spectral energy distributions to multiple photometric data points. These infrared measurements are then used to calculate star formation rates and AGN luminosities. These techniques and calculations are used in Chaps. 3, 4 and 6 and are described in the second section of this chapter.

2.1 Integral Field Spectroscopy

2.1.1 Introduction

With traditional astronomical spectroscopy a single spectrum is obtained for the source that is being observed. However, most extragalactic sources are spatially extended on the sky and therefore it is often desirable to spatially resolve the spectra. In *long-slit* spectroscopy the light from a source is passed through a slit, and then it is the image of this slit that gets dispersed. This has the advantage of providing spatial information in the direction along the slit. However, if you are interested in characterising the spectra for the full source, there are two main disadvantages with long-slit spectroscopy: (1) you only obtain a spectrum of the light that actually passes through the slit (i.e., all other light is lost); (2) all of the spatial information perpendicular to the slit is lost. If the target has a large angular size on the sky

(either intrinsically or due to poor seeing), it can be time consuming to undertake the multiple observations required to obtain spectra for the full source. *Integral field spectroscopy* (IFS) provides the solution.

2.1.2 Integral Field Spectroscopy

IFS is an observational technique that provides three dimensional information of the target being observed. The instruments used are called integral field spectrographs and they produce data in the form of data cubes. These data cubes consist of two spatial dimensions (i.e., $[x, y]$ or $[RA, DEC]$) and a wavelength dimension (i.e., λ ; see Fig. 2.1). Figure 2.1 is a schematic diagram that demonstrates that, with these data, it is possible to obtain images of the target in different wavelength slices and also to obtain spectra at every spatial pixel. These data can thus be used for several different types of analyses, a few examples of which are: (1) creating emission-line images; (2) tracing the velocity structure of emission and absorption lines across the target; (3) measuring emission-line flux ratios across the target. Common scientific experiments that are performed with IFS data of extragalactic objects include:

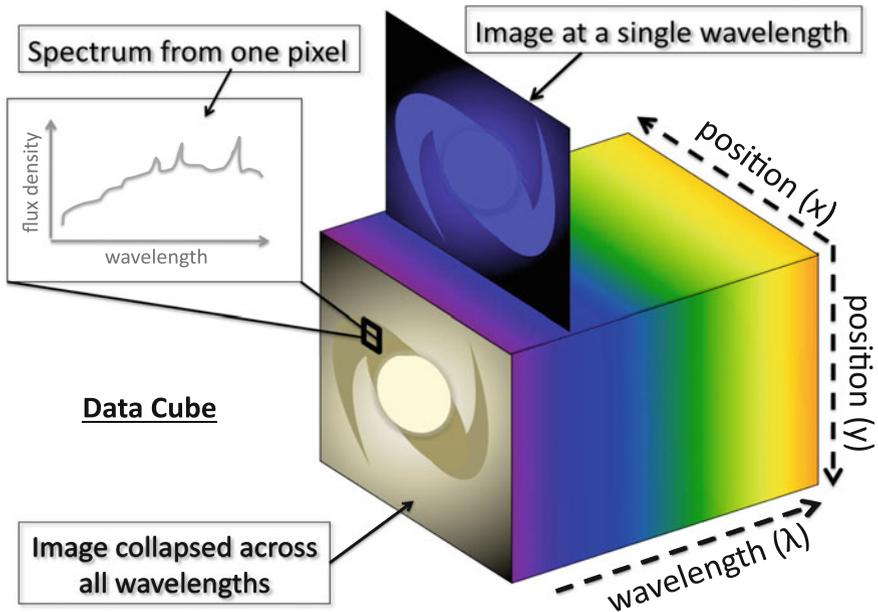


Fig. 2.1 Schematic diagram of a data cube. A data cube provides information in three dimensions: two spatial dimensions (i.e., an image in $[x,y]$) and a third dimension of wavelength. It is therefore possible to obtain an image of the target at a single wavelength or collapsed over wavelength slices. Furthermore, at every spatial pixel of the datacube a spectrum can be extracted

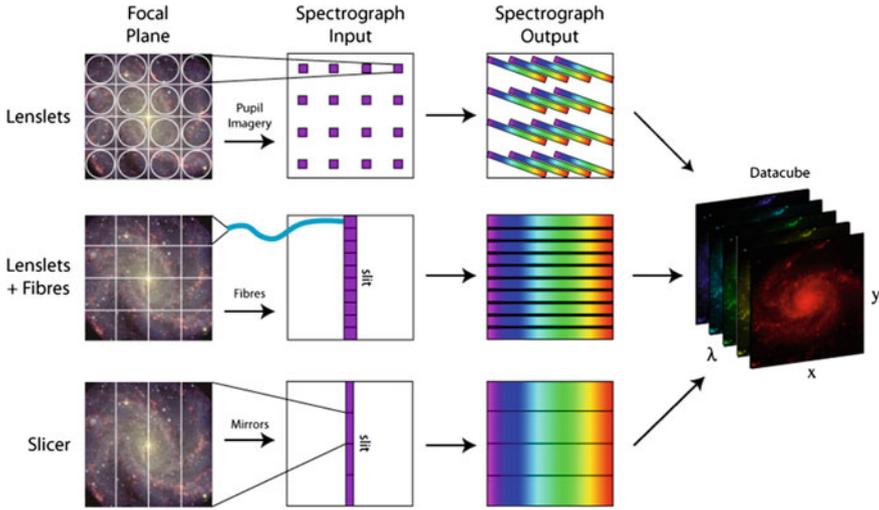


Fig. 2.2 A diagram of the main techniques used in IFS. An IFU samples the light from the focal plane using different techniques (lenslets, lenslets plus fibres and an image slicer are shown here) and then sends the light to a spectrograph to be dispersed. The spectrograph output can then be formatted into a datacube (see Fig. 2.1) during the data reduction process. *Image Credit* M. Westmoquette; Adapted from Allington-Smith and Content (1998)

- (1) measuring the dynamical structures of gas and stars;
- (2) spatially resolving stellar populations;
- (3) measuring the spatial distribution of on-going star formation;
- (4) searching for and characterising outflowing or inflowing gas.

IFS is performed with an integral field spectrograph in the optical or infrared wavebands. These instruments consist of an integral field unit (IFU), which samples the light into multiple spatial components, and a spectrograph, which disperse the light. IFUs sample the light by using lenslets, fibres or slicing mirrors. Figure 2.2 illustrates the main methods of IFUs, and they are summarised below.

- *Lenslets arrays* can be used to format the image into several points of light that are then dispersed by the spectrograph. The dispersed light is angled to avoid excessive overlap between the spectra.
- *Fibres* can be used either on their own or in combination with a lenslet array. This technique uses a bundle of optical fibres to sample the image directly or the fibres can be placed behind a lenslet array. The light from the fibres is then aligned to create a “pseudoslits” that is passed to the spectrograph.
- An *image slicer* uses segmented mirrors to split the image into horizontal stripes that are sent in slightly different directions. A second set of mirrors then formats these slices on top of each other into a “pseudoslits” that is then passed to the spectrograph.

The formatted light (using the above methods) is collimated and dispersed by the spectrograph before being recorded by the detector. The final output image consists

of multiple lines of spectra, corresponding to different positions in the original image (see Fig. 2.2). Each individual spectrum can then be reformatted into the three-dimensional data cube (Fig. 2.1) during the data reduction process.

2.1.3 The Instruments Used in This Thesis

Five different integral field spectrographs are used in this thesis: (1) The IFU mode of the Gemini Multi-object Spectrograph (GMOS; Allington-Smith et al. 2002) installed on the Gemini-South telescope in Chile; (2) The Near-Infrared Integral Field Spectrometer (NIFS; McGregor et al. 2003) installed on Gemini-North in Hawaii; (3) The Spectrograph for INtegral Field Observations in the Near Infrared (SINFONI; Eisenhauer et al. 2003) on the Very Large Telescope (VLT) in Chile; (4) The VISIBLE MultiObject Spectrograph (VIMOS; Le Fèvre et al. 2003) installed on the VLT and (5) The K-band Multi Object Spectrograph (KMOS; Sharples et al. 2004, 2013) installed on the VLT. This sub-section gives a brief overview of each instrument and their properties are summarised in Table 2.1.

- **SINFONI** is a near-infrared spectrograph which uses an image slicer IFU. The IFU contains 32 slices with three choices of slit height, leading to different pixel scales and fields-of-view (see Table 2.1). In Chap. 3 of this thesis we use SINFONI with slit heights of 250 mas which results in a $8'' \times 8''$ field-of-view. There are four

Table 2.1 Summary of IFS instruments used in this thesis

Name	Design	Pixel scale (milli-arcsec)	Field of view (arcsec)	Wavelength coverage (μm)	Resolution
NIFS	Image slicer	103×40	3×3	0.94–2.40	$\approx 5000\text{--}6000$
GMOS ^a	Fibre + lenslet	200	5×7	0.36–0.94	$\approx 600\text{--}4400$
SINFONI ^b	Image slicer	125×250	8×8	1.10–2.45	$\approx 1500\text{--}4000$
		50×100	3×3		
		12.5×25	0.8×0.8		
VIMOS ^c	Fibre	670×670	27×27	0.370–0.860	$\approx 1440\text{--}3100$
		330×330	13×13		
KMOS ^d	Image slicer	200×200	2.8×2.8	0.8–2.5	$\approx 2000\text{--}4200$

A summary of the properties of the different integral field spectrographs used in this thesis

^aWe use GMOS in “one-slit” mode that provides a field-of-view of 5×3.5 arcsec

^bSINFONI has three different options for spatial sampling and they are all listed here; however, in this thesis we only use the 8×8 arcsec field-of-view

^cFor VIMOS, we only provide a summary of the high resolution grisms as an example (as used in Chap. 5). VIMOS also provides medium and low resolution grisms with different fields-of-view, wavelength coverage and spectral resolutions (see Le Fèvre et al. 2003)

^dKMOS contains 24 identical IFUs

gratings available (J, H, K, H+K) giving an overall wavelength coverage of 1.1–2.45 μm . In Chap. 3 of this thesis we use the H+K grating, which has a spectral resolution of $\lambda/\Delta\lambda \approx 1500$.

- **NIFS** is a near-infrared spectrograph which uses an image slicer IFU. There are 29 individual slices with a height of 103 mas. There are four gratings (Z, J, H, K) giving an overall wavelength coverage of 0.94–2.40 μm . In Chap. 3 of this thesis we use NIFS with the J, H and K filters which provide spectral resolutions of $\lambda/\Delta\lambda \approx 5300$ –6000.
- **GMOS** is a multi-purpose optical instrument that can be used for imaging and spectroscopy. For this thesis we make use of the IFU inside the instrument that makes it into an integral field spectrograph. A lenslet array of 1500 elements is used to slice the image into small components. 1000 elements are used to observe the target field and 500 elements are used to simultaneously observe a blank sky field ≈ 1 arcmin away from the target field. Each lenslet is coupled to a fibre that takes the sliced components to the spectrograph in the form of two “pseudoslits”. In “two-slit mode” (i.e., using both pseudoslits) the full field-of-view is sent to the detector (i.e., $5'' \times 7''$). In “one-slit mode” only half of the field-of-view is recorded; however, the extra space on the detector is used to increase the recorded spectral coverage. A variety of gratings are available with different spectral resolutions that are optimised for either blue or red wavelengths. In Chap. 4 we use the GMOS IFU in one-slit mode with the B1200 grating, which has a spectral resolution of $\lambda/\Delta\lambda \approx 3700$, and an effective field-of-view of $5'' \times 3.5''$.
- **VIMOS** is similar to GMOS, in that it is a multi-purpose optical instrument that can be used for imaging or spectroscopy. For this thesis we make use of the IFU instrument that makes in into an integral field spectrograph. The VIMOS IFU consists of 6400 fibres. The scale of these fibres can be changes between 0.33'' per fibre and 0.67'' per fibre. The VIMOS spectrograph contains three spectral resolution modes, high resolution (HR; with red orange or blue grisms), medium resolution (MR; with only one grism) or low resolution (LR; with red or blue grisms). The LR mode provides a field-of-view of $54'' \times 54''$ or $27'' \times 27''$, when using 0.67''/fibre or 0.33''/fibre, respectively. In contrast, The HR and MR modes provide a field-of-view of $27'' \times 27''$ or $13'' \times 13''$, when using 0.67''/fibre or 0.33''/fibre, respectively. In Chap. 5 we use the VIMOS IFU in HR mode and 0.67''/fibre with the Orange grating.
- **KMOS** is a second-generation instrument that contains 24 individual near-infrared IFUs. These 24 IFUs can be individually positioned inside a 7.2 arcmin diameter patrol field. Each IFU contains 14 slices, with 14 spatial pixels along each slice. This results in spatial sampling of $0.2'' \times 0.2''$ and a field-of-view of $2.8'' \times 2.8''$ for each IFU. These IFUs are fed to three separate spectrographs. There are five gratings available (IZ, YJ, H, K, H+K) giving an overall wavelength coverage of 0.8–2.5 μm . In Chap. 8 we present some observations using KMOS with the YJ filter.

2.1.4 Data Reduction

The final image produced by an IFS is in the form of several rows of spectra each corresponding to a different position in the target field (see Fig. 2.2). Just like with traditional spectroscopy these spectra must undergo several calibration steps before they can be used for scientific analyses. The details of the data reduction for the individual instruments are provided in Chaps. 3 and 4; however, a brief outline of the main steps is given here.

Firstly, sky images or “frames” are subtracted from the science frames. Sky frames are observations of a blank-sky field using exactly the same set-up and exposure times as the science observations. This sky subtraction is required because the background sky has a non-zero brightness in the optical and infrared wavebands. Of particular trouble are the large number of infrared emission lines produced by molecules in the atmosphere that need to be removed by this sky-subtraction process. The sky-subtracted science frames must then undergo a series of calibration steps. The steps of calibration are required to correct for imperfections in the telescope and instrument response and also convert the recorded data into physical units (i.e., flux density and wavelength). Several calibration frames are required to perform these steps and they are listed below.

- Bias frames are zero second exposures taken with the detector’s shutter closed. These frames can be used to correct for a non-zero “bias” and/or hot pixels on the detector.
- Dark frames are images taken with the detector’s shutter closed. Several are taken to produce a set of dark frames with exposure lengths to match all of the other calibration and science frames. These dark frames can be used to correct all of the other frames for the average “dark current” (due to thermal excitation) produced during an exposure.
- Flat-field frames are images taken when the detector is illuminated with a uniform source of non-dispersed light. The process of “flat fielding” uses these frames to correct for the non-uniform response of the detector frames due to spatial variations in the sensitivity of the detector or anomalies in the optical path. In the case of IFS this can be done for each slice individually.
- Arc frames are images of the dispersed light from an arc-lamp with a well known set of spectral lines (e.g., Neon and Argon lamps). These frames are used to create the wavelength solution for the science images (i.e., assign a wavelength to each of the pixels in the dispersion direction). These frames can also be used to correct for any spectral curvature on the science frame.
- Ronchi mask frames are images of a grid of perfectly arranged slits or rulings. These frames can be used to correct for any spatial distortions in the images.

After the calibration process the sky-subtracted science frames (see Fig. 2.2) will have been corrected for the telescope and instrument imperfections and have a good wavelength solution. The datacube now needs to be constructed by extracting each row of spectra on the frame, and placing them into the appropriate spatial position

(see Fig. 2.1). Finally, each spectrum needs to be flux calibrated. This is done using observations of “standard stars” that are observed and calibrated in the same manner to the science targets. The chosen stars have well known intrinsic luminosities and spectra in the wavelength bands being observed and their spectra have few features beyond the continuum. The standard star observations are used to create a model of the correction between observed intensity units (i.e., counts) and flux density units as a function of wavelength. This model is then applied to each spatial pixel of the science data cube. Standard stars can also be used to correct for telluric absorption by the atmosphere which can be particularly troublesome in the infrared waveband.

2.2 Spectral Energy Distributions

Throughout this thesis we make measurements of the star formation rates and bolometric AGN luminosities of our targets. To do this, we primarily make use of infrared photometric data.¹ The most direct tracer of star formation is through the ultra-violet and optical light produced by the youngest stars and supernovae. However, this emission can be significantly absorbed by obscuring dusty material around these areas, making it very challenging to observe. Fortunately this obscuring dust can be used to *indirectly* trace the star formation because it is re-emits the stellar light it absorbs at mid infrared (MIR) and far infrared (FIR) wavelengths, typically peaking at rest frame wavelengths of $\approx 80\text{--}100\ \mu\text{m}$ (e.g., Mullaney et al. 2011). The total infrared emission (rest frame wavelengths of $8\text{--}1000\ \mu\text{m}$) is arguably the best tracer of ongoing star formation, particularly at high redshifts, providing that the conversion factors between FIR luminosity and star formation rate have been well calibrated. Fortunately, detailed studies of galaxies in the local Universe have provided these calibration factors, incorporating supernovae rates to measure star formation rates and multi-wavelength photometric data.

In Sect. 1.2.2 it was shown that AGN produce emission at MIR wavelengths, due to them begin surrounded by a dusty structure (often being described as a “torus”). This dust is heated by the central source and then re-emits at these wavelengths. This dust is predicted to be relatively hot resulting in a emission that peaks at $\lambda \approx 20\text{--}50\ \mu\text{m}$, with a steep fall-off at longer wavelengths (e.g., Schartmann et al. 2008; Nenkova et al. 2008; Mullaney et al. 2011; Fig. 1.2). If a measurement of the infrared emission produced by the dust-heated AGN is available it is then possible to estimate an AGN bolometric luminosity using the relevant bolometric correction factors (see Sect. 1.2.4). In summary, when observing the infrared emission produced by galaxies that host AGN, it will be produced by a combination of dust heated by the AGN (peaking at MIR wavelengths) and cooler dust heated by star formation. In summary, if sufficient infrared photometric data exists (i.e., the infrared spectral energy

¹We note that we use emission-line luminosities and X-ray luminosities as a tracer of AGN bolometric luminosity in Chaps. 4 and 6, respectively. These tracers are discussed in Sects. 1.2.2–1.2.4.

distribution [SED], is well sampled), it is possible to decompose this emission and obtain measurements of both the star formation rates and AGN bolometric luminosity.

In Chaps. 3 and 4 of this thesis we make use of a technique, that was initially presented in Mullaney et al. (2011), that simultaneously fits an empirically derived AGN model (parameterised in an analytical form) and empirically derived host-galaxy templates to the infrared photometric data. We show an example of this in Fig. 2.3. We simultaneously fit these data with the five star-forming galaxy templates (“SB1”–“SB5”) and the mean AGN model, originally defined in Mullaney et al. (2011) and extended to cover the wavelength range $3\text{--}10^5\ \mu\text{m}$, by Del Moro et al. (2013). To derive the AGN luminosities and SFRs (Table 4.2) we use the star-forming template plus AGN template combination that gives the lowest overall χ^2 value. For the sources where we have no detections in the far-infrared bands, we are unable to measure reliable SFRs and we therefore calculate conservative upper limits by increasing the normalisation of the star-forming templates until the photometric upper limits were reached. We emphasise that our method decomposes the emission due to an AGN and star formation, therefore removing the need to assume the relative contributions from these two processes. Furthermore, we find that, for targets that we have observed which have archival MIR spectroscopic measurements (e.g., Menéndez-Delmestre et al. 2009; Valiante et al. 2007), there is a good agreement between the strength of the AGN component calculated from our SED-fitting procedure and the strength of the AGN derived from the mid-infrared spectroscopy (also see Del Moro et al. 2013 for more tests of this method).

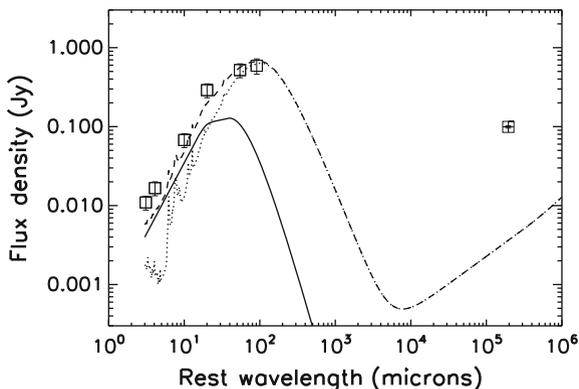


Fig. 2.3 An example infrared SED, where we have decomposed the emission from star formation and AGN. The *squares* show the photometric infrared data (with the addition of a 1.4GHz radio measurement at $\approx 10^5$ GHz). The *dotted curve* shows the best-fit star formation template and the *solid curve* shows the AGN template described in Sect. 2.2. The *dashed curve* shows the total fit from the combined processes. The AGN emission dominates at MIR wavelengths (i.e., $\lesssim 20\ \mu\text{m}$) and the star formation dominated at FIR wavelengths (i.e., $\gtrsim 20\ \mu\text{m}$). We can use these best fit solutions to estimate a SFR and AGN luminosity for our targets

In Chap. 6 we measure SFRs for a sample of $z = 1-3$ X-ray detected AGN. However, due to the limited photometric data available, it was not possible to reliably perform full SED fitting for these targets. Instead, we make the simplifying assumption that at FIR wavelengths, the emission is dominated by star formation heated dust, with little contribution from the AGN. This assumption has been shown to be reliable in numerous studies (e.g., Netzer et al. 2007; Mullaney et al. 2011) and is discussed further within Chap. 6 itself. For these targets we make average measurements of the total infrared luminosities using average FIR fluxes from stacked *Herschel* data and assumed SEDs (see Sect. 6.4).

2.3 Calculation of SFRs and AGN Luminosities

We calculated the SFRs for each source by measuring the infrared luminosities of the star-formation components from the best-fitting SED solutions ($L_{\text{IR,SF}}$; integrated over 8–1000 μm) and using the conversion factor from Kennicutt (1998).² To determine the bolometric AGN luminosities for each source, we first calculated the AGN continuum luminosity at 6 μm from the best fitting SED solution and converted this to an AGN bolometric luminosity using a correction factor of $\times 8$ (Richards et al. 2006; see Sect. 1.2.4).

References

- Allington-Smith, J., & Content, R. 1998, *PASP*, 110, 1216
 Allington-Smith, J., Murray, G., Content, R., et al. 2002, *PASP*, 114, 892
 Chabrier, G. 2003, *PASP*, 115, 763
 Del Moro, A., Alexander, D. M., Mullaney, J. R., et al. 2013, *A&A*, 549, A59
 Eisenhauer, F., Abuter, R., Bickert, K., et al. 2003, in *Society of Photo-Optical Instrumentation Engineers (SPIE) Conference Series*, Vol. 4841, *Instrument Design and Performance for Optical/Infrared Ground-based Telescopes*, ed. M. Iye & A. F. M. Moorwood, 1548–1561
 Kennicutt, Jr., R. C. 1998, *ARAA*, 36, 189
 Le Fèvre, O., Saisse, M., Mancini, D., et al. 2003, in *Society of Photo-Optical Instrumentation Engineers (SPIE) Conference Series*, Vol. 4841, *Instrument Design and Performance for Optical/Infrared Ground-based Telescopes*, ed. M. Iye & A. F. M. Moorwood, 1670–1681
 McGregor, P. J., Hart, J., Conroy, P. G., et al. 2003, in *Society of Photo-Optical Instrumentation Engineers (SPIE) Conference Series*, Vol. 4841, *Instrument Design and Performance for Optical/Infrared Ground-based Telescopes*, ed. M. Iye & A. F. M. Moorwood, 1581–1591
 Menéndez-Delmestre, K., Blain, A. W., Smail, I., et al. 2009, *ApJ*, 699, 667
 Mullaney, J. R., Alexander, D. M., Goulding, A. D., & Hickox, R. C. 2011, *MNRAS*, 414, 1082
 Nenkova, M., Sirocky, M. M., Ivezić, Ž., & Elitzur, M. 2008, *ApJ*, 685, 147
 Netzer, H., Lutz, D., Schweitzer, M., et al. 2007, *ApJ*, 666, 806
 Richards, G. T., Lacy, M., Storrie-Lombardi, L. J., et al. 2006, *APJS*, 166, 470

²We note that in Chap. 4 we convert the SFR calibration of Kennicutt (1998) from a Salpeter IMF to a Chabrier IMF by dividing by a factor of 1.7 (Chabrier 2003).

- Schartmann, M., Meisenheimer, K., Camenzind, M., et al. 2008, *A&A*, 482, 67
- Sharples, R., Bender, R., Agudo Berbel, A., et al. 2013, *The Messenger*, 151, 21
- Sharples, R. M., Bender, R., Lehnert, M. D., et al. 2004, in *Society of Photo-Optical Instrumentation Engineers (SPIE) Conference Series*, Vol. 5492, *Ground-based Instrumentation for Astronomy*, ed. A. F. M. Moorwood & M. Iye, 1179–1186
- Valiante, E., Lutz, D., Sturm, E., et al. 2007, *ApJ*, 660, 1060

Chapter 3

Energetic Galaxy-Wide Outflows in High- z ULIRGs Hosting AGN Activity

Abstract In this chapter we aim to address the question: can high-redshift AGN drive galaxy-wide outflows of ionised gas in the absence of extremely powerful radio jets? Most theoretical models of galaxy evolution predict that this must be the case. We investigate eight $z = 1.4\text{--}3.4$ ultra-luminous infrared galaxies (ULIRGs) that host active galactic nuclei (AGN) activity, including known sub-millimetre luminous galaxies (SMGs). The targets have radio luminosities that are typical of high-redshift ULIRGs ($L_{1.4\text{ GHz}} = 10^{24}\text{--}10^{25}\text{ W Hz}^{-1}$) and therefore are not radio-loud AGN and do not host extremely powerful radio jets. We present integral-field spectroscopy observations, covering the [O III] $\lambda\lambda 4959, 5007$ emission-line doublet. We de-couple kinematic components due to the galaxy dynamics and mergers from those due to outflows. The four systems with the most powerful AGN host the signatures of large-scale energetic outflows, that is, extremely broad [O III] emission-line profiles (FWHM $\approx 700\text{--}1400\text{ km s}^{-1}$) across $\approx 4\text{--}15\text{ kpc}$ (i.e., across the extent of the host galaxies). The four less powerful AGN display weaker evidence for spatially extended outflows; however, this may be due, in-part, to the lower quality data for these objects. We estimate that the outflows are depositing energy into the gas in their host galaxies at considerable rates (i.e., $\dot{E} \approx 10^{43}\text{--}10^{45}\text{ erg s}^{-1}$). Based on the measured maximum velocities ($v_{\text{max}} \approx 400\text{--}1400\text{ km s}^{-1}$) we find that a large fraction of the gas is likely to become unbound from their host galaxies, but it is unlikely to be completely removed from the galaxy haloes. We show that the power of the growing black holes in these objects (i.e., the AGN activity) is likely to be the dominant power source for driving the outflows; however, star formation may also play a role in some of the sources.

3.1 Motivation

Section 1.5 of this thesis described how galaxy-wide AGN-driven outflows are predicted to be an integral part of the evolution of massive galaxies. These outflows are predicted to be particularly prevalent at high redshift (see Sect. 1.5). Previous to the work presented in this chapter, IFU observations of a handful of high-redshift AGN had identified powerful galaxy-wide outflows that have the potential to unbind gas from their host galaxies. However, the sources that were observed are predominantly

radio-loud AGN that make up the minority of the high-redshift AGN population (see Sect. 1.5.2). The work presented in this chapter uses IFU observations of high-redshift *radio-quiet* AGN, to search for and characterise galaxy-wide outflows. A general introduction to this research is in Sect. 1.5, whilst in this chapter we only give a short introduction to the research that is specific to the observations presented here. Significant portions of the work presented in this chapter have been published in Harrison et al. (2012); however, some of the text presented here has been adapted for this thesis, including an extended introduction.

3.2 Introduction

One of the main aims of the work presented in this thesis is to search for high-velocity outflowing gas in the ISM of galaxies hosting AGN activity. These outflows are predicted to exist by models of galaxy evolution (see Sect. 1.5) and therefore it is crucial that we observe these outflows in the real Universe. Many of these models predict that these outflows will be most prevalent in galaxies that are currently undergoing high levels of star formation and BH growth (i.e., AGN activity). As these outflows remove the star-forming material (i.e., cold gas), the star formation levels are predicted to reduce and ultimately be suppressed. Therefore, potentially the best place to search for AGN-driven outflows is within high-redshift far-IR (FIR; $\lambda = 8\text{--}1000\ \mu\text{m}$) luminous galaxies with $L_{\text{FIR}} > 10^{12} L_{\odot}$ (Ultra-Luminous Infra-Red Galaxies—ULIRGs), such as sub-millimetre galaxies (SMGs). These systems are the most intensely star-forming galaxies known with star formation rates (SFRs) of $\gtrsim 100\text{--}1000 M_{\odot} \text{yr}^{-1}$ and are thought to represent a rapid star-forming phase that every massive galaxy goes through (e.g., Swinbank et al. 2006; Tacconi et al. 2008).

Rapid star-forming galaxies are found to be most common at redshifts of $z \approx 2\text{--}2.5$ (Chapman et al. 2004, 2005; Wardlow et al. 2011; Simpson et al. 2014) which roughly coincides with the peak epoch of BH growth (e.g., Cattaneo and Bernardi 2003; Hopkins et al. 2007; Silverman et al. 2008). Around 20–30% of these objects have been found to host significant AGN activity, using various diagnostics at optical, mid-infrared and X-ray wavelengths (e.g., Alexander et al. 2003, 2005, 2008; Chapman et al. 2005; Ivison et al. 2010; Rafferty et al. 2011; Wang et al. 2013). Therefore, these galaxies may be undergoing a crucial transition phase in their evolution, from a period of rapid BH growth and star formation to non-star forming elliptical galaxies (also see e.g., Sanders et al. 1988). This transition phase, which is potentially facilitated by kpc-scale AGN-driven outflows, is an evolutionary period required by many models (e.g., Silk and Rees 1998; Springel et al. 2005; Di Matteo et al. 2005; Hopkins et al. 2006, 2008; see Alexander and Hickox 2012 for a review; also see Sect. 1.5). Observational support of this idea comes from clustering analyses of SMGs and quasars which supports the idea that starburst and AGN activity occur in the same systems (Hickox et al. 2012) and that SMGs may evolve into massive, non-star forming elliptical galaxies by the present day (see also Simpson et al. 2014).

Based on the theoretical motivation outlined above, in this chapter we present our observations searching for galaxy-wide outflows in rapidly star-forming galaxies that host AGN activity. To do this, we use integral field spectroscopy (IFS; see Chap. 2). We presented Gemini-North Near-Infrared Integral Field Spectrometer (NIFS) and VLT Spectrograph for Integral Field Observations in the Near Infrared (SINFONI) IFU observations of $z \approx 2$ ULIRGs with known AGN activity. These sources have radio luminosities ($L_{1.4\text{GHz}} = 10^{24}\text{--}10^{25} \text{ W Hz}^{-1}$) typical of high- z ULIRGs and can therefore be considered to be radio-quiet AGN. In Sect. 3.3 we give the details of the IFU observations and data reduction, in Sect. 3.4 we derive star formation rates and AGN luminosities for the targets using SED fitting, in Sect. 3.5 we present the analysis and results, in Sect. 3.6 we discuss the results and their implications for galaxy evolution models and in Sect. 3.7 we give our conclusions. We have adopted $H_0 = 71 \text{ km s}^{-1}$, $\Omega_M = 0.27$ and $\Omega_\Lambda = 0.73$ throughout; in this cosmology, $1''$ corresponds to 8.5 kpc at $z = 2.0$ (see Appendix B).

3.3 Observations and Data Reduction

3.3.1 Target Selection

For this study we selected ten radio-detected $z = 1.4\text{--}3.4$ star-forming galaxies that host AGN activity to study their spatially resolved dynamics. The sample consists of eight SMGs (labelled ‘SMM’ with $850 \mu\text{m}$ flux densities $S_{850} > 4 \text{ mJy}$) and two sources that are undetected at $850 \mu\text{m}$ (labelled ‘RG’). We will collectively refer to the sample as high-redshift ULIRGs throughout. We detected [O III] emission in eight of the sources (see Sect. 3.4 for details). All our detected sources are [O III] luminous ($L_{[\text{O III}]} = 10^{42}\text{--}10^{44} \text{ erg s}^{-1}$), and have high [N II]/ $H\alpha$ and [O III]/ $H\beta$ emission-line ratios, or an AGN-dominated continuum, indicating the presence of AGN activity (e.g., Kewley et al. 2006), with most of the sources having additional observational evidence for AGN activity (see Table 3.1 for details). We provide details of the target selection below.

Seven of our targets are selected from Takata et al. (2006) who presented near-IR spectroscopy around the redshifted [O III] $\lambda\lambda 4959, 5007$ emission-line doublet of 22 high-redshift ULIRGs. In order to select sources that might contain AGN-driven outflows, we chose seven targets with broad ($\text{FWHM} \gtrsim 700 \text{ km s}^{-1}$) and bright ($F_{[\text{O III}]} \gtrsim \text{few} \times 10^{-16} \text{ erg s}^{-1}$) [O III] emission. We also include in our sample three, $z \approx 2\text{--}2.5$ ULIRGs selected from Alaghband-Zadeh et al. (2012) which were identified as hosting AGN activity on the basis of their rest-frame optical emission-line ratios. These targets were initially selected on the basis of their $H\alpha$ luminosities and are therefore not pre-selected to have luminous and broad [O III] emission. One of the sources was presented in a pilot study (SMMJ1237+6203; Alexander et al. 2010) and we present the whole sample here.

Table 3.1 Gemini-North NIFS and VLT SINFONI observations

ID	Source	R.A. (J2000)	Dec (J2000)	$z_{\text{[OIII]}}$	$S_{1.4}$ (μJy)	$L_{1.4\text{GHz}}$ ($10^{24} \text{ W Hz}^{-1}$)	AGN	t_{exp} (ks)	Average seeing		Instrument	Quality
									($''$)	(kpc)		
(1)	(2)	(3)	(4)	(5)	(6)	(7)	(8)	(9)	(10)	(11)	(12)	(13)
1	SMMJ0217-0503	02:17:38.68	-05:03:39.5	2.021	207 \pm 16	5.0	O	4.8	0.47	4.0	S	1
2	SMMJ0302+0006	03:02:27.73	+00:06:53.5	1.405	217 \pm 9	2.2	O, M?	11.4	0.42	3.6	N	2
3	RGJ0302+0010	03:02:58.94	+00:10:16.3	2.239	55 \pm 10	1.7	O, U	9.6	0.38	3.2	N	1
4	RGJ0332-2732	03:32:56.75	-27:32:06.3	2.315	160 \pm 20	5.3	O	2.4	0.53	4.4	S	1
5	SMIMJ0943+4700 ^a	09:43:04.08	+47:00:16.2	3.351	60	4.7	O, U, M	14.4	0.42	3.2	N	1
6	SMMJ1235+6215	12:35:49.41	+62:15:36.9	2.199	93 \pm 6	2.8	O, X, M?	7.8	0.45	3.8	N	2
7	SMMJ1237+6203	12:37:15.97	+62:03:23.1	2.075	179 \pm 9	4.6	X, U, B	7.8	0.30	2.5	N	1
8	SMMJ1636+4057	16:36:50.43	+40:57:34.5	2.385	242 \pm 11	8.7	O, U, M, B	13.2	0.33	2.7	N	1
9	SMMJ2217+0010	22:17:37.39	+00:10:25.1	(2.610)	179 \pm 19	7.9	O, M	3.6	0.40	3.2	N	3
10	SMMJ2217+0017	22:17:42.25	+00:17:02.0	(2.278)	114 \pm 27	3.7	O	9.6	0.56	4.7	S	3

The radio positions, redshifts, radio luminosities and the details of the observations for the AGN-ULIRG IFU targets. *Notes*: Column (1): Source ID. Column (2): Source name. Columns (3)–(4): The co-ordinates corresponding to the radio positions from: Ledlow et al. (2002); Swinbank et al. (2004); Chapman et al. (2005); Miller et al. (2008); Morrison et al. (2010); Ivison et al. (2011); Arumugam et al. (in prep); R.J. Ivison (priv. comm). Column (5) The redshifts based on the narrow [O III] emission lines using the galaxy-integrated spectra presented in Fig. 3.3. For SMMJ2217+0010 and SMMJ2217+0017 we do not detect [O III] and we therefore quote the H α redshift from Takata et al. (2006) and Alaghband-Zadeh et al. (2012), respectively. Column (6): Radio flux densities taken from the same references as for the radio positions. Column (7): Rest-frame radio luminosities using the standard k -correction and a spectral index of $\alpha = 0.8$. Column (8): Evidence for AGN activity in the sources on the basis of: O: optical emission-line ratios (Swinbank et al. 2004; Takata et al. 2006; Alaghband-Zadeh et al. 2012; this work); M: excess in the mid-infrared continuum from infrared spectra (Valiante et al. 2007; Menéndez-Delmeire et al. 2009; the evidence for IR-AGN activity in the sources with a “?” is tentative); U: rest-frame UV spectral signatures (Ledlow et al. 2002; Smail et al. 2003; Chapman et al. 2004, 2005); X: X-ray observations (Alexander et al. 2005); B: Broad-line AGN (Swinbank et al. 2005; Coppin et al. 2008). Column (9): The total on-source exposure times for the data presented here. Columns (10)–(11): The average seeing for the observations, based on standard star observations. Column (12): The instrument used for the observations, either SINFONI (S) or NIFS (N). Column (13) A data quality flag as follows: 1: data which have sufficiently high signal-to-noise ratios to study the spatially resolved kinematics; 2: data with lower signal-to-noise ratios and limited spatially resolved information; 3: undetected in [O III] λ 5007 in this study.

^aFor SMMJ0943+4700 we observed the radio counter-part H6 (Ledlow et al. 2002) and the 1.4 GHz flux density has been corrected for an amplification factor of 1.2 (Cowie et al. 2002)

Details of our observations and the targets' 1.4 GHz flux densities, obtained from the literature, are provided in Table 3.1. The 1.4 GHz radio luminosities ($L_{1.4\text{GHz}}$) are calculated using Equation (2) from Alexander et al. (2003), with the 1.4 GHz flux densities shown here and an assumed spectral index of $\alpha = 0.8$.¹ We estimate AGN luminosities for our sources using the SED fitting procedures outlined in Sect. 3.4 and these values are provided in Table 3.2.

Although this sample is heterogeneous, it is more representative of the overall AGN population than previous IFU studies searching for AGN-driven outflows in high-redshift radio galaxies (with $L_{1.4\text{GHz}} \gtrsim 10^{27} \text{ W Hz}^{-1}$; e.g., Nesvadba et al. 2008). For example, the radio luminosities of our sources ($L_{1.4\text{GHz}} = 10^{24} - 10^{25} \text{ W Hz}^{-1}$) imply a space density of $\Phi \approx 10^{-5} \text{ Mpc}^{-3}$ compared to $\Phi \lesssim 10^{-8} \text{ Mpc}^{-3}$ for high-redshift radio galaxies (Fig. 3.1; Simpson et al. 2012; Willott et al. 1998). This is important if we are to understand the prevalence of AGN-driven outflows in high-redshift galaxies. In Fig. 3.1 we compare the integrated [O III] properties and radio luminosities of our sample with low- and high-redshift AGN.

3.3.2 IFU Observations

Seven of the sources in our sample (those selected from Takata et al. 2006) were observed using Gemini-North NIFS (Table 3.1). Depending on the target redshift, we used the J -, H - or K -band grisms to ensure that we cover the rest-frame [O III] $\lambda\lambda 4959, 5007$ emission-line doublet. The details of the NIFS IFU are described in Sect. 2.1.3. The observations were taken between 2008 March 25 and May 19 and 2009 August 5 and December 30. All observations were taken in $<0.5''$ seeing. The observations were performed using repetitions of the standard ABBA configuration in which we chopped either $6''$ to blank sky or, if the source was compact (emission-line region $<1.5''$), we chopped within the IFU. Individual exposures were 600 s. Final on-source exposure times and seeing measurements, calculated using the corresponding standard star observations, are shown in Table 3.1. We reduced the data with the Gemini IRAF NIFS pipeline which includes the steps of data reduction outlined in Sect. 2.1.4.

Three of the sources in our sample were observed using VLT/SINFONI (Table 3.1). The details of the SINFONI IFU are presented in Sect. 2.1.3. We used the widest available field-of-view, 8.0×8.0 arcsec and the $H + K$ grism for this work. The targets were chopped around quadrants of the IFU for sky subtraction. All observations were taken in $<0.6''$ seeing. Individual exposures were 600s. Final on-source exposure times and seeing measurements, calculated using the corresponding standard star observations, are shown in Table 3.1. The data were reduced using the SINFONI ESOREX pipeline, which includes the steps of data reduction outlined in Sect. 2.1.4.

¹This value is approximately the mean value for radio-identified SMGs with an observed range of roughly $\alpha = 0.2-1.5$, which includes AGN (Ibar et al. 2010). Here we define a spectral index α such that flux density, S_ν , and frequency, ν , are related by $S_\nu \propto \nu^{-\alpha}$.

Table 3.2 Target SED data and derived properties

ID	Source	S_8	S_{24} (μ Jy)	S_{70} (mJy)	S_{250} (mJy)	S_{550} (mJy)	S_{500} (mJy)	S_{850} (mJy)	$L_{IR,SF}$ ($10^{12} L_{\odot}$)	SFR ($M_{\odot} \text{ yr}^{-1}$)	$L_{AGN,SED}$ ($10^{46} \text{ erg s}^{-1}$)
(1)	(2)	(3)	(4)	(5)	(6)	(7)	(8)	(9)	(10)	(11)	(12)
1	SMMJ0217-0503	44.7 ± 2.3	0.49 ± 0.05	–	36.3 ± 5.8	33.9 ± 6.3	21.7 ± 6.8	4.4 ± 1.7	4.5 ± 0.8	780 ± 160	< 0.2
2	SMMJ0302+0006	63.4 ± 6.8	0.45 ± 0.05	< 13.6	–	–	–	4.4 ± 1.3	2.0 ± 0.3	340 ± 50	0.14 ± 0.09
3	RGJ0302+0010	–	< 0.24	–	–	–	–	< 4.5	$< 2.1^a$	< 360	2.0 ± 0.2^b
4	RGJ0332-2732	7.8 ± 0.2	0.94 ± 0.09	–	27.5 ± 5.8	27.5 ± 6.3	20.3 ± 6.8	< 3.6	4.9 ± 0.9	850 ± 120	2.2 ± 0.4
5	SMMJ0943+4700 ^c	–	0.57 ± 0.06	–	22.6 ± 5.8	26.5 ± 6.3	17.3 ± 6.8	8.7 ± 1.5	7.5 ± 1.5	1300 ± 200	5.8 ± 0.2
6	SMMJ1235+6215	64.1 ± 22	0.63 ± 0.06	< 4.1	30.4 ± 5.8	37.4 ± 6.3	27.0 ± 6.8	8.3 ± 2.5	6.9 ± 1.0	1200 ± 170	0.7 ± 0.4
7	SMMJ1237+6203	$(1.02 \pm 0.09)^d$	$(1.61 \pm 0.7)^d$	< 6.0	< 14	< 24	< 24	5.3 ± 1.7	2.4 ± 0.2	430 ± 50	5.33 ± 0.05
8	SMMJ1636+4057	66.8 ± 6.8	0.95 ± 0.1	< 9.1	44.4 ± 5.8	36.6 ± 6.3	29.0 ± 6.8	8.2 ± 1.7	7.9 ± 1.5	1400 ± 200	1.9 ± 0.6

Infrared photometric data, SFRs and AGN luminosities for the AGN-ULIRG IFU targets. *Notes* Column (1): Source ID. Column (2): Source name. Column (3): $8 \mu\text{m}$ flux densities and their uncertainties taken from: Hainline et al. (2009); Cardamone et al. (2010); or the Spitzer archive. Column (4): $24 \mu\text{m}$ flux densities from: Ivison et al. (2007); Valiante et al. (2007); Menéndez-Delmestre et al. (2009); Dickinson et al. in prep; or the Spitzer archive. Uncertainties are assumed to be 10 % of the measured values. Column (5): $70 \mu\text{m}$ flux densities taken from Hainline et al. (2009). Columns (6)–(8): The 250, 350 and 500 μm flux densities. This HerMES data was accessed through the HeDaM database (<http://hedam.oamp.fr>) operated by CeSAM and hosted by the Laboratoire d’Astrophysique de Marseille. The uncertainties quoted are the confusion noise for each band. Column (9): $850 \mu\text{m}$ flux densities and their uncertainties taken from: Cowie et al. (2002); Chapman et al. (2004, 2005); Clements et al. (2008). Column (10): Derived IR luminosities (8–1000 μm) from the star formation component of the SED fitting procedures described in Sect. 3.4. Column (11): Star formation rates derived using the quoted $L_{IR,SF}$ values and the relationship from Kennicutt (1998). Column (12): The estimated AGN bolometric luminosity calculated using the methods outlined in Sect. 3.4.

^aThe value quoted is calculated using the radio-infrared correlation (assuming a $q = 2.1$). This is an upper limit as there will be an unknown AGN contribution to the radio flux.

^bThis AGN bolometric luminosity is derived from the [O III] luminosity (see Sect. 3.4).

^cFor SMMJ0943+4700 the flux densities have been corrected for an amplification factor of 1.2. We note that the quoted flux densities will cover both radio counterparts to this source.

^dThese are the 12 and 22 μm flux densities taken from the *Wide-field Infrared Survey Explorer* archive (Wright et al. 2010).

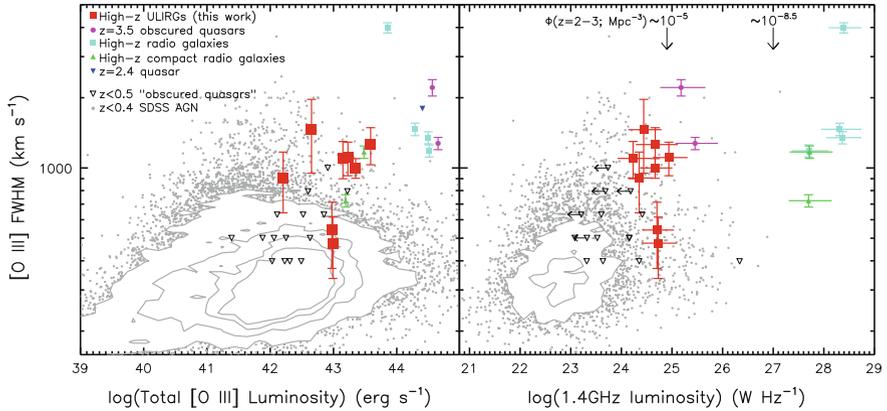


Fig. 3.1 FWHM versus total [O III] λ 5007 luminosity (*left*) and FWHM versus 1.4 GHz luminosity (*right*) for our eight [O III] detected targets. Shown for comparison are low redshift ($z < 0.4$) AGN from the Sloan Digital Sky Survey (Mullaney et al. 2013) and $z < 0.5$ obscured quasars with long-slit data (Greene et al. 2011). Also shown are other high-redshift sources with IFU data: $z \approx 2-3$ radio galaxies (Nesvadba et al. 2006, 2008), compact radio galaxies (Nesvadba et al. 2007a), $z \approx 3.5$ obscured quasars (Nesvadba et al. 2011) and a $z = 2.4$ quasar (Cano-Díaz et al. 2012). Our targets have very broad [O III] emission, comparable with high-redshift radio galaxies but having 3–4 orders of magnitude lower radio luminosities such that they are ≈ 3 orders of magnitude more common at $z \approx 2-3$. When the [O III] profile is decomposed into multiple components, the FWHMs of the broadest components have been plotted. All rest-frame radio luminosities are calculated using the standard k -correction, on the basis of their measured 1.4 GHz flux densities. Radio spectral indices are taken to be $\alpha = 0.8$; however, the horizontal error bars indicate the range of luminosities using spectral indices in the range $\alpha = 0.2-1.5$. The *arrows* in the *right* panel correspond to space densities of $\Phi \approx 10^{-5} \text{ Mpc}^{-3}$ (Simpson et al. 2012) and $\Phi \approx 10^{-8.5} \text{ Mpc}^{-3}$ (Willott et al. 1998) from the radio luminosity function at $z \approx 2.5$

3.3.3 Flux Calibration and Stacking

Each night’s data were flux calibrated separately using observations of standard stars, at a similar airmass to the target galaxies, which were reduced in the same manner as the targets. Since the [O III] $\lambda\lambda$ 4959,5007 emission-line doublets typically lie in regions of $> 95\%$ sky transparency, no corrections were made for telluric absorption. To find spatial centroids for the flux-calibrated data cubes, white-light (wavelength collapsed) images around the redshifted [O III] λ 5007 emission line (NIFS targets) or H α emission line (SINFONI targets) were produced. The data cubes for which we could not measure a centroid were discarded to improve the reliability of the spatially resolved data. Data cubes were only discarded for SMM J0302+0006 (2 discarded out of the 21 observed), RG J0302+0010 (4 discarded out of 20) and SMM J1235+6215 (8 discarded out of 21). We then spatially aligned and co-added the individual data cubes to create the final mosaic, using a median with a 3σ clipping threshold to remove remaining cosmetic defects and cosmic rays. The total on-source exposure times used in the final stacks are given in Table 3.1.

In all of the following sections, the effect of instrumental dispersion was corrected for by subtracting it in quadrature from the observed line dispersions.

3.4 Star-Formation Rates and AGN Luminosities

To assist in the analyses of this work we need to constrain the star-formation rates and AGN luminosities of the eight [O III]-detected sources in a consistent manner. To achieve this we obtained infrared flux densities from the literature (Table 3.2). We fit these data using a spectral energy distribution (SED) decomposition technique that simultaneously fits for the emission produced by star formation and AGN. We perform the SED fitting and calculate star formation rates and AGN luminosities using the methods described in Sect. 2.2. The infrared data points and the overall best-fit solutions are shown in Fig. 3.2 and the values are tabulated in Table 3.2.

We found that all of our targets have $L_{\text{IR,SF}} > 10^{12} L_{\odot}$, confirming that they are ULIRGs with SFRs in the range $\approx 300\text{--}1400 M_{\odot} \text{ yr}^{-1}$. For the source RG J0302+0010, which has insufficient infrared photometric data to constrain the infrared

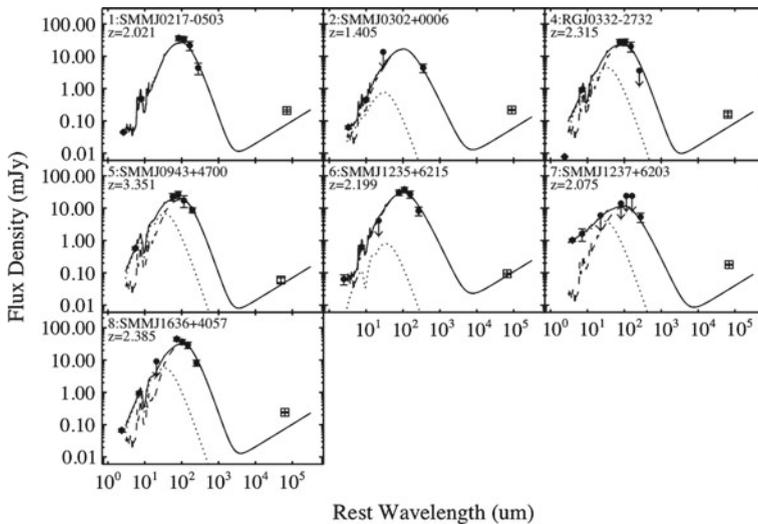


Fig. 3.2 The infrared flux densities (*filled circles*) in the rest frame for the seven sources for which we performed SED fitting (see Sect. 3.4, Table 3.2 and Del Moro et al. (2013) for more details). The source RG 0302+0010 (source ID number 3) does not appear due to insufficient infrared data available. For guidance, also shown are the overall best-fit SEDs. The total SEDs are shown as *solid curves*, the AGN templates are shown as *dotted curves* and the starburst templates are shown as *dashed curves*. The 1.4 GHz flux densities (*open squares*) were not included in the SED fitting process. These SED fits were used to constrain the contributions to the infrared luminosities from AGN activity and star formation activity for each of the sources (Table 3.2)

luminosity, we estimated the infrared luminosity using the radio-infrared relationship for star-forming galaxies (e.g., Helou et al. 1985) with $q = 2.1$, which is a typical value for high-redshift ULIRGs (Kovács et al. 2006). For this source we take the value of $L_{\text{IR,SF}}$ as an upper limit because the AGN will be contributing some unknown fraction of the radio luminosity (e.g., see Fig. 3.2 which shows that some of the sources have excess radio emission relative to that expected from star-formation alone; also see Del Moro et al. 2013). SMMJ0217–0503 had no significant AGN component and we only obtain an upper limit on the AGN infrared luminosity for this source.

We compared all the SED-derived AGN bolometric luminosities to those predicted using the measured [O III] luminosities and the locally derived relationship of Heckman et al. (2004) ($L_{\text{AGN}} = 3500L_{[\text{OIII}]}$). We found that the $L_{[\text{OIII}]}$ derived AGN luminosities are on average a factor of ≈ 2.5 higher than the SED derived values, with a remarkably small scatter (all sources have a factor of 2.5 ± 1.5), giving evidence that (1) our derived AGN bolometric luminosities are reasonable, and (2) the [O III] luminosities are dominated by AGN activity. To predict the AGN luminosity for the source RGJ0302+0010, for which we were unable to perform the SED fitting, we therefore take the $L_{[\text{OIII}]}$ derived AGN luminosity and divide by a factor of 2.5.

3.5 Analysis and Results

We have studied the galaxy-integrated and spatially resolved properties of the [O III] $\lambda\lambda 4959,5007$ emission-line doublet in our sample. Of the ten sources in our sample, six have spatially extended [O III] emission, two have lower quality [O III] data and limited spatially-resolved information and two were undetected in [O III] (see Table 3.1). In this section we provide the details of our analyses and give an overview of the results of the sample as a whole. In this section we first describe the galaxy-integrated properties of the eight [O III] detected targets before providing a detailed analysis of the kinematics for the six spatially resolved sources. We defer discussion of the results and their implications for galaxy evolution to Sect. 3.6.

3.5.1 Galaxy-Integrated Spectra

In Fig. 3.3 we show the galaxy-integrated spectra around the [O III] $\lambda\lambda 4959,5007$ emission-line doublet for the eight sources with detected [O III] emission. The two sources that have an [O III] flux below our detection threshold (SMMJ2217+0010 and SMMJ2217+0017) are not shown. The spectra were created by integrating over the full spatial extent of the observed [O III] line emission; i.e., the aperture sizes to create the spectra were chosen by increasing the sizes until the [O III] fluxes reached a maximum.

To fit the emission-line profiles we employed a χ^2 minimisation procedure, down-weighting at the positions of the strongest sky lines. We fit the [O III] $\lambda\lambda 4959,5007$

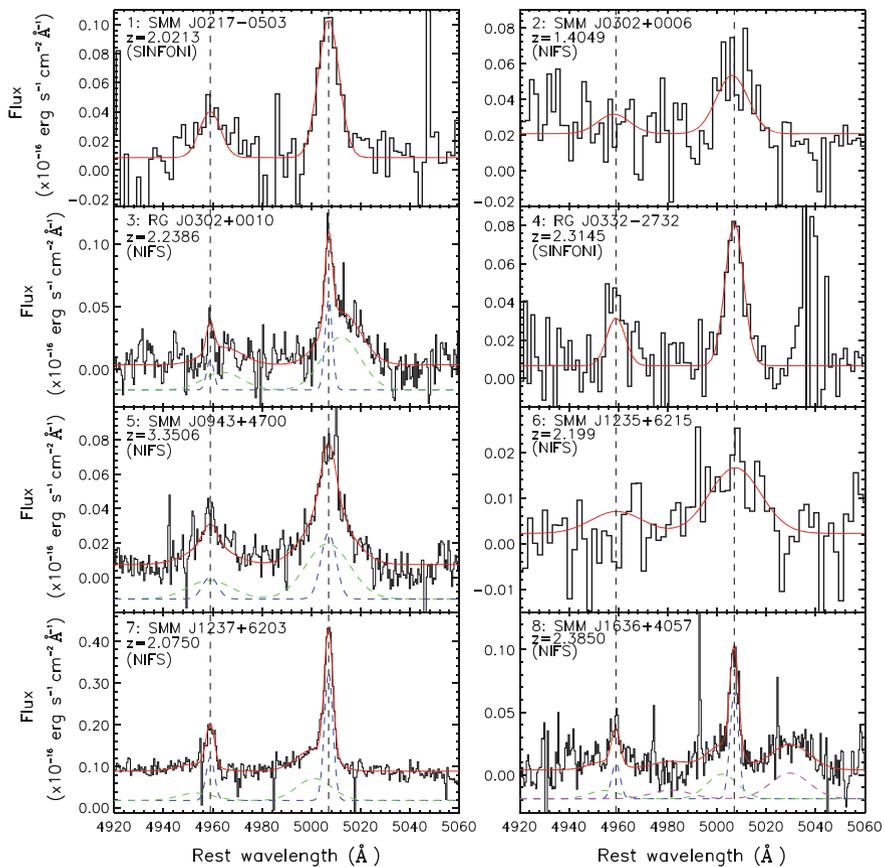


Fig. 3.3 Galaxy-integrated spectra, shifted to the rest-frame, around the $[\text{O III}]\lambda\lambda 4959, 5007$ emission-line doublet. A large variety in the $[\text{O III}]$ emission-line profiles is found, with both blueshifted and redshifted extremely broad ($\text{FWHM} \approx 900\text{--}1500 \text{ km s}^{-1}$) emission-line components, in addition to narrow emission-line components. Of particular note is SMMJ1636+4057 which exhibits two broad components separated by $\approx 1700 \text{ km s}^{-1}$, one blueshifted and one redshifted with respect to the narrow component. The *dashed curves* show the individual Gaussian components (with an arbitrary flux offset) of the fits when two or three components are required. The *solid curves* show the best fitting overall emission-line profiles. The *vertical dashed lines* show the rest-frame wavelengths of redshifted $[\text{O III}]\lambda 4959$ and $[\text{O III}]\lambda 5007$ based on the redshift of the narrowest Gaussian component. The spectra for SMMJ0302+0006 and SMM 1235+6215 are of lower signal-to-noise than the other spectra and have been binned by a factor of four for clarity. The parameters of the emission-line fits and their uncertainties are given in Table 3.3

emission-line doublet with Gaussian components using a fixed wavelength separation. The intensity ratio was fixed at $[\text{O III}]\lambda 4959/[\text{O III}]\lambda 5007 = 0.33$ (e.g., Dimitrijević et al. 2007) and the width of the $[\text{O III}]\lambda 4959$ line was fixed to be the same as the $[\text{O III}]\lambda 5007$ line. In several cases the emission-line profiles are complex, with the presence of asymmetric wings. To characterise this complexity,

we first fit a single Gaussian profile followed by a double Gaussian profile, only accepting the double Gaussian profile if it resulted in a significant improvement ($\Delta\chi^2 > 25 \sim 5\sigma$). In one source, SMMJ1636+4057, we find evidence for a third Gaussian component at $+1350 \text{ km s}^{-1}$ from the narrow component; we confidently attribute this to [O III] as there are other emission lines found at the same velocity as this component (Smail et al. 2003). Uncertainties on the parameters are calculated by perturbing one parameter at a time, allowing the others to find their optimum values, until the χ^2 value increases by 1. The mean of these upper and lower uncertainties are quoted throughout. The parameters for all of the fits and their uncertainties are given in Table 3.3. We note that the true absolute uncertainties on the flux measurements will be a factor of $\approx 2\text{--}3$ higher, due to unknown uncertainties on the absolute flux calibrations. We note that there are some discrepancies between the fluxes shown here and those given in Takata et al. (2006) and Alexander et al. (2010). We attribute this to the more reliable flux calibration procedures used in our work.

In Fig. 3.3 it can be seen that the [O III] emission-line profiles are diverse across the sample, with both narrow (FWHM \approx few hundred km s^{-1}) and broad components (FWHM $\approx 900\text{--}1500 \text{ km s}^{-1}$) which can be blueshifted and/or redshifted with respect to the narrow emission ($-350 \lesssim \Delta v \lesssim 1350 \text{ km s}^{-1}$). We will discuss in Sect. 3.6.1 that the narrow [O III] components are likely to be tracing the host galaxy dynamics and merger remnants, while the broad components are most likely due to energetic outflows. We will also argue that the observed diversity across the sample is due to a combination of orientation and obscuration effects.

The four sources for which we were able to decompose the line profiles into multiple Gaussian components are those which have the highest flux and consequently highest signal-to-noise (Table 3.3). It is possible that the other four detected sources also have both narrow and broad emission-line components, but we were unable to decompose them in these spectra due to their lower signal-to-noise ratios. For example, in one source (SMMJ0217–0503), we identify a broad [O III] component in a sub-region of the IFU datacube that is not identified in the galaxy-integrated spectrum (Sect. 3.5.3).

In the following sections we discuss the spatially resolved properties of all of the [O III] detected sources except SMMJ0302+0006 and SMMJ1235+6215. SMMJ0302+0006 is spatially unresolved in our data while SMMJ1235+6215 only displays tentative evidence for extended emission. Due to the low signal-to-noise ratios of the data for these two sources it is difficult to determine if they are intrinsically compact or if any extended emission lies below our detection threshold. We do not discuss these two sources any further in this section.

3.5.2 Surface Brightness, Velocity and FWHM Maps

In Fig. 3.4 we show surface brightness maps, velocity fields and FWHM maps for the six sources for which we were able to spatially resolve the [O III] emission. These maps were produced using an adaptive binning technique such that the high surface

Table 3.3 Galaxy-integrated [O III] λ 5007 emission-line properties

Component A		Component B							
ID	Source	$z_{\text{[OIII],A}}$	FWHMA (km s^{-1})	Flux _A ($10^{-16}\text{erg s}^{-1}\text{cm}^{-2}$)	$z_{\text{[OIII],B}}$	FWHM _B (km s^{-1})	Flux _B ($10^{-16}\text{erg s}^{-1}\text{cm}^{-2}$)	Δv (km s^{-1})	Total [O III] Luminosity (10^{42}erg s^{-1})
(1)	(2)	(3)	(4)	(5)	(6)	(7)	(8)	(9)	(10)
1	SMMJ0217-0503	2.0213[6]	540 ± 170	3.1 ± 0.7	–	–	–	–	9.3
2	SMMJ0302+0006	1.4049[10]	900 ± 300	1.3 ± 0.4	–	–	–	–	1.6
3	RGJ0302+0010	2.23861[12]	200 ± 40	0.87 ± 0.17	2.2419[7]	1100 ± 120	2.7 ± 0.4	+300 ± 60	13.9
4	RGJ0332-2732	2.3145[5]	480 ± 140	2.3 ± 0.5	–	–	–	–	9.9
5	SMMJ0943+4700 ^a	3.3506[4]	430 ± 110	1.1 ± 0.5	3.3503[8]	1300 ± 200	2.6 ± 0.4	+20 ± 60	38.4
6	SMMJ1235+6215	2.199[2]	1500 ± 500	1.2 ± 0.4	–	–	–	–	4.5
7	SMMJ1237+6203	2.07502[3]	234 ± 10	4.1 ± 0.2	2.0714[4]	1000 ± 100	2.9 ± 0.3	–350 ± 40	22.5
8	SMMJ1636+4057	2.38500[12]	240 ± 30	1.3 ± 0.3	2.3817[18]	900 ± 200	1.0 ± 0.4	–290 ± 160	16.8
					2.4003[10]	1100 ± 180	1.4 ± 0.2	+1350 ± 90	

The properties of the galaxy-integrated [O III] emission-line profiles shown in Fig. 3.3. *Notes:* The properties of the galaxy-integrated [O III] emission-line profiles shown in Fig. 3.3. Numbers in square brackets give the uncertainty in the last decimal place. Column (1): Source ID. Column (2): Source name. Columns (3)–(5): Properties of the narrowest Gaussian components (Component A): redshift, FWHM and flux respectively. Columns (6)–(8): Same as the previous three columns but for the broader Gaussian components (Component B). Column (9): The velocity offset between the two Gaussian components. Column (10): The total [O III] luminosity. The bottom line of the table gives the properties of the third Gaussian component which is fit to the profile of SMMJ1636+4057. Flux and luminosity values are not extinction corrected. The quoted uncertainties are from the parameters of the emission-line fits. The true uncertainties on the fluxes are a factor or ≈ 2 –3 higher, due to uncertainties in the absolute flux calibration.

^aThe flux values for SMMJ0943+4700 have been corrected for an amplification factor of 1.2.

brightness regions are averaged over smaller regions than the outer low surface brightness regions. We do this by taking a mean spectrum over 3×3 spatial pixels, increasing to 5×5 pixels (maximum for SINFONI data) and ultimately to 7×7 pixels (maximum for NIFS data) if the signal was too low to produce a sufficiently high χ^2 improvement in a continuum+emission-line fit over a simple continuum fit ($\Delta\chi^2 > 16$; equivalent to $\approx 4\sigma$). The continuum level was taken to be the median of line-free continuum in the vicinity of the emission lines. When this criterion is met, we fit the [O III] $\lambda\lambda 4959, 5007$ emission-line doublet with a single-Gaussian profile, allowing the normalisation, width and central wavelength to vary. We defined zero velocity at the central wavelength of the narrowest Gaussian component in the galaxy-integrated spectra.

The flux maps in Fig. 3.4 show that the observed emission-line regions of these sources are diverse and irregular, with at least two sources showing spatially distinct emission-line regions, indicating multiple interacting or merging systems. The [O III] emission is observed to be extended up to ≈ 20 kpc. The velocity fields and FWHM maps in Fig. 3.4 show that there are regions dominated by narrow [O III] emission (\approx few hundred km s^{-1}) with modest velocity gradients ($\Delta v \lesssim 200 \text{ km s}^{-1}$). There are also regions which are kinematically chaotic, extended up to 15 kpc in spatial extent, with extreme widths ($700 \lesssim \text{FWHM} \lesssim 2500 \text{ km s}^{-1}$) and large velocity offsets (Δv up to $\approx 1700 \text{ km s}^{-1}$).

The velocity fields and FWHM maps in Fig. 3.4 were created using single Gaussian components and do not separately trace the broad and narrow [O III] emission line components observed in the galaxy-integrated spectra (Fig. 3.3). Instead they roughly trace the brightest [O III] kinematic component. For example, we will show that although the source SMMJ1237+6203 looks to have fairly quiescent kinematics in Fig. 3.4, the extremely broad and high-velocity [O III] component seen in the galaxy-integrated spectrum (FWHM $\approx 1000 \text{ km s}^{-1}$; $\Delta v \approx -350 \text{ km s}^{-1}$; Fig. 3.3) is found over the central 5–8 kpc (see also Alexander et al. 2010). In the following sections, we therefore use further analysis methods to give a more complete description of the kinematics of these sources.

3.5.3 *Regions Dominated by Narrow and Broad Emission Lines*

In Fig. 3.5 we show spatially-integrated spectra from regions dominated by broad or narrow emission lines. To produce these spectra we took our [O III] FWHM maps (Fig. 3.4) and integrated the spectra over the pixels that have FWHM $< 500 \text{ km s}^{-1}$ (narrow [O III]) and those that have FWHM $> 500 \text{ km s}^{-1}$ (broad [O III]). We do not do this for SMMJ1237+6203 as there are too few pixels that contain emission lines with FWHM $> 500 \text{ km s}^{-1}$. For this source the narrow component of the [O III] emission line seen in Fig. 3.4 dominates the whole of the velocity and FWHM maps. The value of 500 km s^{-1} was motivated by the maximum line-widths generally

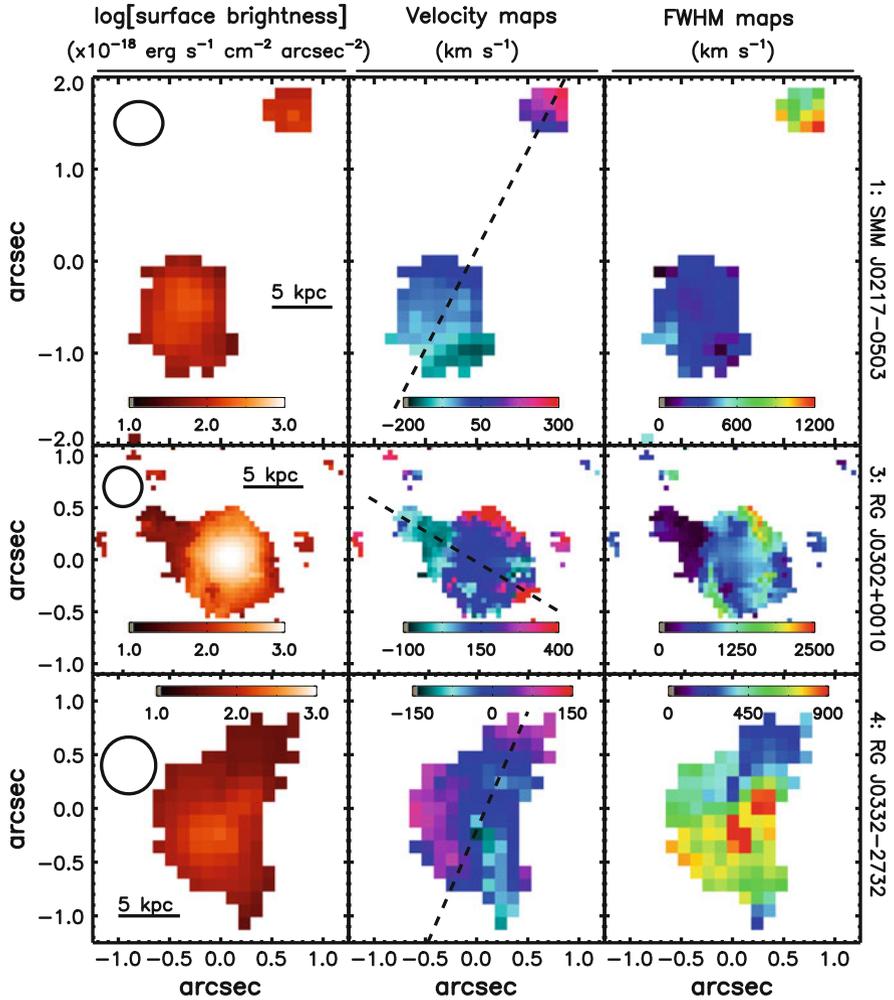


Fig. 3.4 [O III] flux, velocity and FWHM fields, from fitting single Gaussian components to individual pixels for our six sources with spatially resolved emission. The [O III] emission is evidently very diverse and complex with large velocity offsets (up to ≈ 1700 km s $^{-1}$) and regions of both narrow (FWHM \approx few 100 km s $^{-1}$) and broad (FWHM \approx 700–2500 km s $^{-1}$) emission-line components. We attribute the narrow emission to galaxy dynamics and merger remnants and the broad emission to energetic outflows. Zero velocity is defined at the redshift of the narrowest component shown in the galaxy-integrated spectra (Fig. 3.3). No corrections have been made for unknown orientation effects or dust extinction. The open circles denote the average seeing disc during the observations of each target and the solid bars indicate 5 kpc in extent. The dashed lines show the axes through which we produced the velocity and FWHM profiles shown in Fig. 3.6. North is up and east is left in all panels

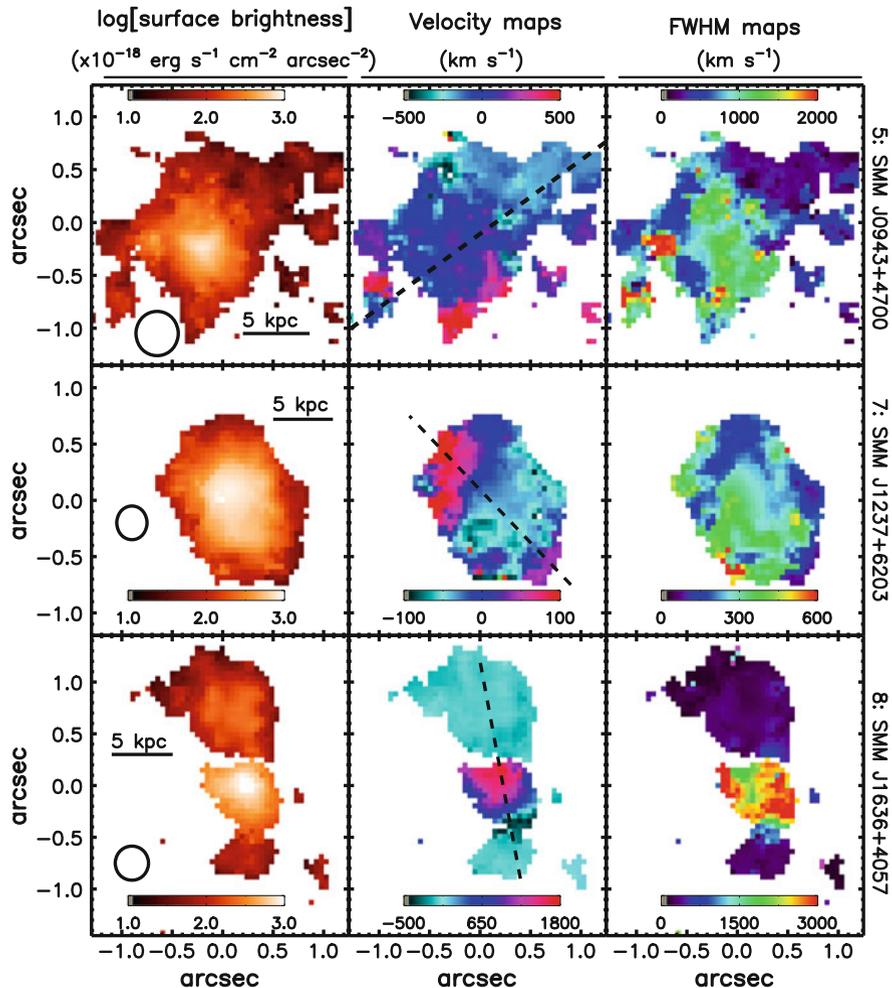
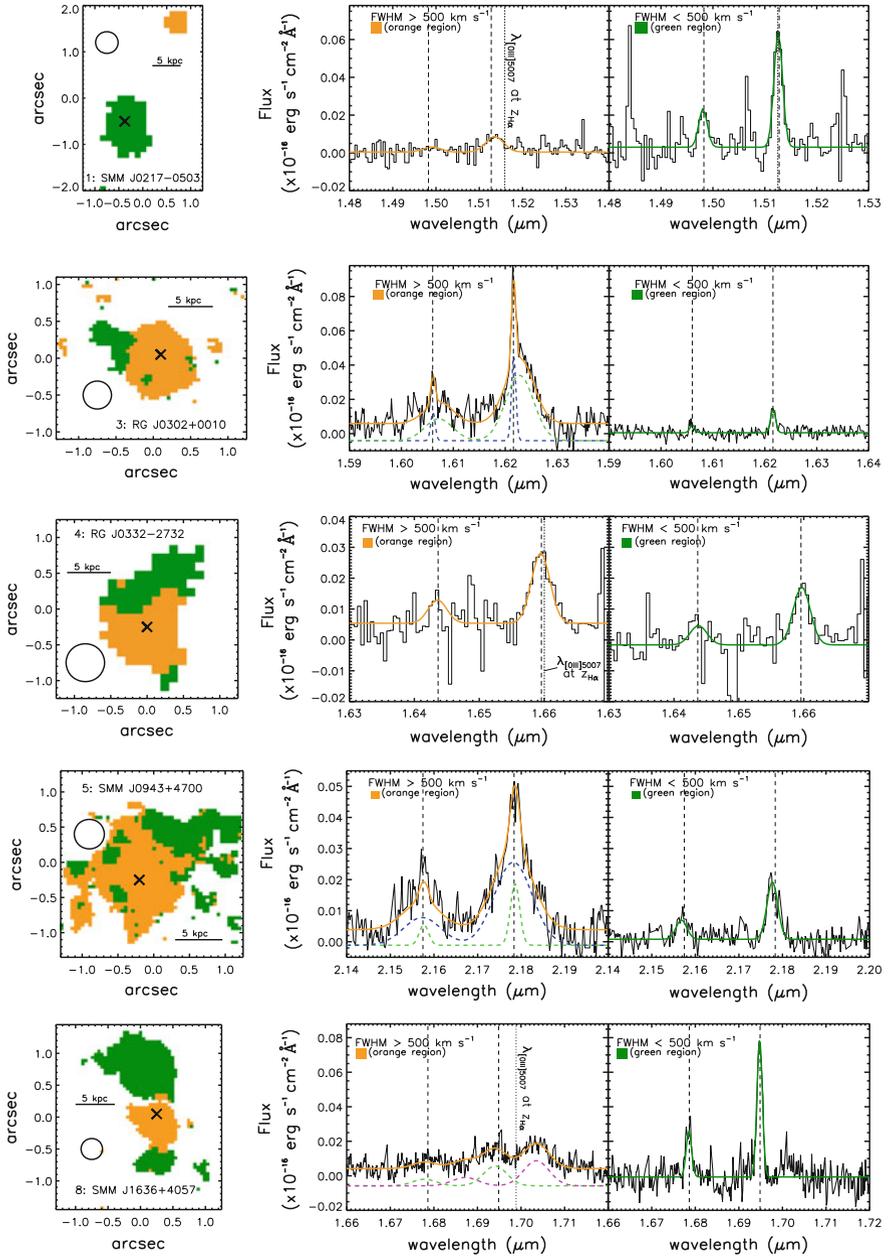


Fig. 3.4 (continued)

expected from galaxy dynamics and merger remnants in high-redshift ULIRGs (see Sect. 3.6.1; Alaghband-Zadeh et al. 2012). We fit the spectra using the same method as the galaxy-integrated spectra (see Sect. 3.5.1) and provide all of the parameters of the fits and their uncertainties in Table 3.4. We also fit any observed $\text{H}\beta$ emission in these regions using a single Gaussian profile and give the parameters and their uncertainties in Table 3.4. When no $\text{H}\beta$ emission lines were detected we use the standard deviation of the emission-line free continuum and the FWHM of the $[\text{O III}]$ emission-line components to derive 3σ upper limits on the flux.

By comparing the spatially-integrated spectra from the regions shown in Fig. 3.5 with the galaxy-integrated spectra shown in Fig. 3.3 we are able to locate the different



◀ **Fig. 3.5** *Left* Maps of our spatially resolved sources colour-coded to separate regions dominated by narrow [O III] emission lines (*green* FWHM < 500 km s⁻¹) or broad [O III] emission-lines (*orange* FWHM > 500 km s⁻¹) determined from the FWHM maps shown in Fig. 3.4. For the source SMMJ1237+6203 the narrow component dominates the [O III] flux throughout and therefore we are unable to define the separate spatial regions using this method (see Sect. 3.5.3 for details). The narrow emission lines are observed over the largest extents but the broad emission lines are still observed in extended regions (≈4–15 kpc). The open circles denote the average seeing discs during the observations, the *solid bars* indicate 5 kpc in extent and the crosses indicate the peak in [O III] surface brightness. North is up and east is *left*. *Middle and Right* The spatially-integrated spectra around the [O III]λλ4959,5007 emission-line doublet extracted from the regions indicated in the *left* panels. The central regions exhibit complex emission-line profiles. The *dashed curves* show the individual Gaussian components (with an arbitrary flux shift) of the fits when two components were required. The *solid curves* show the best fitting overall emission-line profiles; the parameters and their uncertainties are shown in Table 3.4. The *vertical dashed lines* shows the centroids of the [O III]λλ4959,5007 *narrow line* components in the galaxy-integrated spectra (Fig. 3.3). The *vertical dotted lines* for SMMJ0217–0503 and RG J0332–2732 show the expected position of [O III] given the redshift of the H α emission-line from the same spatial region (Alaghband-Zadeh priv. comm.). For the source SMMJ1636+4057 the *vertical dotted line* indicates the expected wavelength of the [O III]5007 line using the redshift of the H α broad-line region (Swinbank et al. 2005)

kinematic components in the galaxies. For example, in the majority of the sources there is narrow emission (FWHM ≈ a few 100 km s⁻¹) extended over the full spatial extent of the emission-line regions (up to ≈20 kpc). The regions dominated by the broadest emission lines (Fig. 3.5) are also the regions where the [O III] emission peaks in surface brightness and the [O III]/H β ratios are the largest ($\log([\text{O III}]/\text{H}\beta) > 0.6$; see Table 3.4), indicating excitation dominated by AGN activity in these regions (e.g., Kewley et al. 2006). Further evidence for the broad emission lines being associated with AGN activity is found in the source SMMJ0217–0503, which is comprised of two separate systems, and the broad emission line is only observed in the system that is identified as hosting AGN activity by Alaghband-Zadeh et al. (2012). In addition, SMMJ1636+4057 displays two broad [O III] components which are co-spatial with the H α broad-line region of the AGN (Menéndez-Delmestre et al. 2013).

3.5.4 Velocity Profiles

To further quantify the [O III] velocity structure and spatial extents of the different kinematic components in our sample we created velocity and FWHM profiles for each of the six spatially resolved sources and show them in Fig. 3.6. To produce these profiles we first repeated the pixel-by-pixel fitting routine outlined in Sect. 3.5.2 with the addition of allowing a second Gaussian component to be fit at each pixel, if this resulted in a significant improvement ($\Delta\chi^2 > 16$; equivalent to $\gtrsim 4\sigma$) over a single Gaussian component. Only two of the sources (RG J0302+0010 and SMMJ1237+6203) had sufficiently bright narrow and broad [O III] emission-line components to de-compose the profiles using this method. For these two sources we took these double-Gaussian component FWHM and velocity maps and took a

running median of all the pixels orthogonal to a vector through the most extended emission (see dashed lines in Fig. 3.4). For the other four spatially resolved sources (SMMJ0217–0503; RGJ0332–2732; SMMJ0943+4700 and SMMJ1636+4057) we used the single-Gaussian component FWHM and velocity maps shown in Fig. 3.4. For the sources SMMJ0217–0503 and RGJ0332–2732 we also plot the relative velocities of the $H\alpha$ emission, extracted from the regions shown in Fig. 3.5, on these velocity profiles. For the source SMMJ1636+4057 we plot the [O III] FWHM and velocity offset values from the spectra extracted from the broad [O III] region (Fig. 3.5) and $H\alpha$ and CO(1–0) data from the literature (Swinbank et al. 2005; Ivison et al. 2011; Menéndez-Delmestre et al. 2013).

Figure 3.6 enables us to separately trace the kinematics of the narrow (FWHM \approx a few hundred km s^{-1}) and broad (FWHM \approx 700–1400 km s^{-1}) [O III] emission-line components. The narrow emission lines have small velocity gradients ($\Delta v \lesssim 200 \text{ km s}^{-1}$) and appear to be at roughly the same velocity as the $H\alpha$ emission and molecular gas, when these data are available for comparison. In contrast, the broad components are offset from the narrow emission by $|\Delta v| \approx 150\text{--}1400 \text{ km s}^{-1}$ and are found over $\approx 4\text{--}15 \text{ kpc}$ in observed linear extent (except SMMJ0217–0503 for which the broad emission is spatially unresolved; $\leq 4 \text{ kpc}$). The source RGJ0332–2732 has emission that is not clearly separated into broad and narrow components; however, we note that the emission is broadest (FWHM $\approx 700 \text{ km s}^{-1}$) in the brightest central region. The source SMMJ0217–0503 consists of two separate systems, which are indicated in Fig. 3.6. In the northern system we do not observe any narrow emission lines; however, the [O III] emission has a large velocity offset from the peak in the $H\alpha$ emission ($\Delta v = -460 \pm 60 \text{ km s}^{-1}$). Of particular note is the source SMM1636+4057 for which the broad components are found at $v \approx \pm 850 \text{ km s}^{-1}$ from the systemic velocity of the $H\alpha$ broad-line region of the AGN (Swinbank et al. 2005; Menéndez-Delmestre et al. 2013).

Due to the large uncertainties in the velocity offsets and FWHM of the broad [O III] components, we do not interpret their kinematic structure any further than quoting their spatial extent and velocity offsets from the systemic redshifts. However, we did perform tests to ensure that the broad emission lines are truly spatially extended and that the observed extents are not just the result of intrinsically compact regions being extended by the seeing during our observations. Following Alexander et al. (2010) we did this by extracting spectra from different regions and we found velocity structure in the broad emission lines, confirming that they are spatially extended.

For the remainder of this work we quote the spatial extent of the broad [O III] emission as the extent of the broad [O III] regions shown in Fig. 3.5 (see Table 3.4). These values are consistent, within the quoted uncertainties, with spatial extents of the broad [O III] emission found in the velocity profiles shown in Fig. 3.6. The source SMMJ1237+6203 does not appear in Fig. 3.5 (see Sect. 3.5.3); therefore, we take the spatial extent from Fig. 3.6 ($\approx 5 \text{ kpc}$) which is conservative based on the 4–8 kpc extent found by Alexander et al. (2010) for this source. The quoted spatial extents are likely to be lower limits as they are not corrected for orientation and low surface brightness broad [O III] emission will not be detected by our fitting procedures (described in Sect. 3.5.2). We define the velocity offsets of the broad

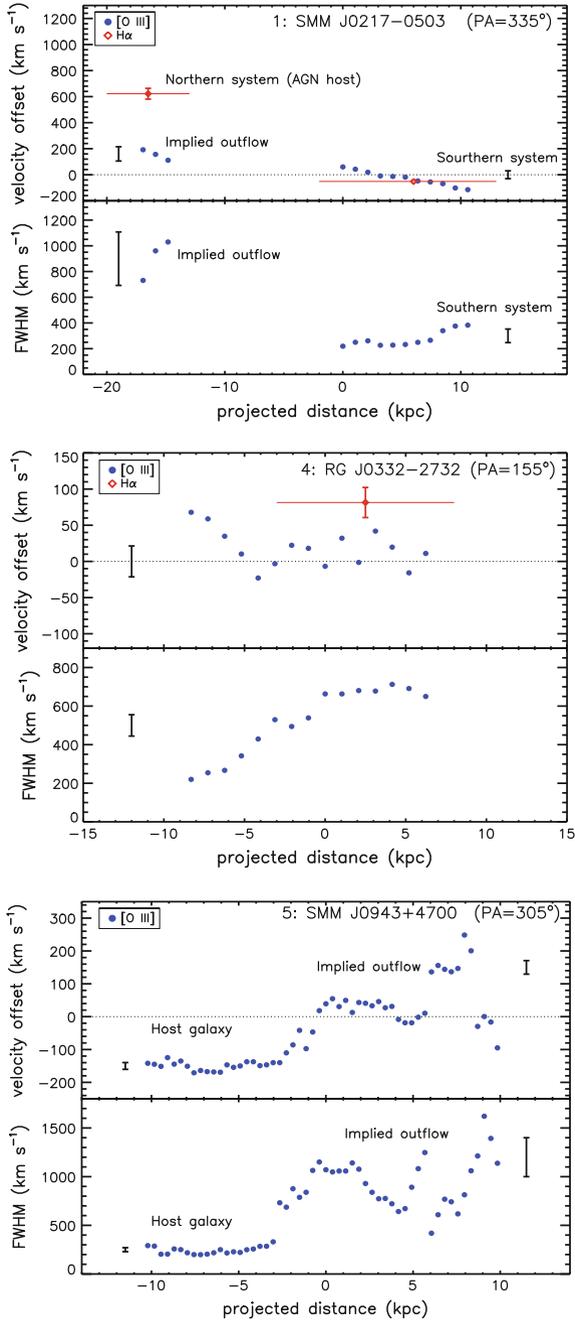


Fig. 3.6 (continued)

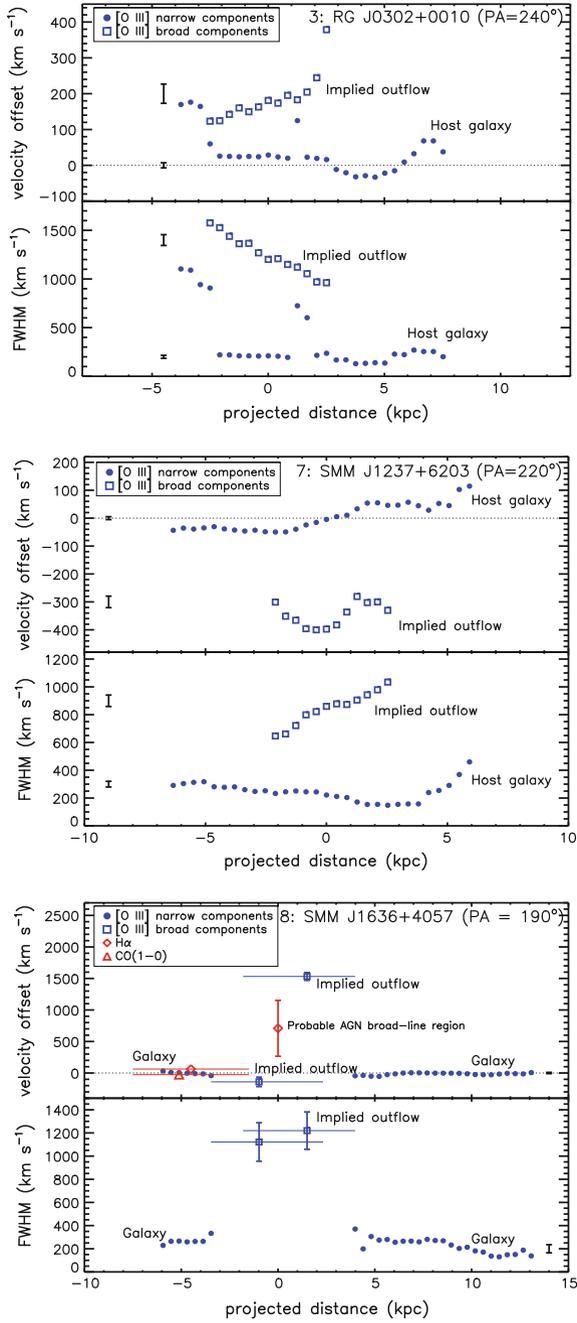


Fig. 3.6 (continued)

◀ **Fig. 3.6** A velocity and FWHM profile of the [O III] emission lines for our six spatially resolved sources, along vectors at the angles indicated in the *upper-right* of each panel (see Sect. 3.5.4 for how these were produced). When it was possible to de-couple the [O III] emission-line profiles into two components we have shown these as *filled circles* (narrow) and open squares (broad). In some cases $H\alpha$ data and CO(1–0) data are plotted, taken from the literature (Swinbank et al. 2005; Ivison et al. 2011; Alaghband-Zadeh et al. 2012; Menéndez-Delmestre et al. 2013). The data points for the broad [O III] components for the source SMMJ1636+4057 are taken from the fits to the spectra shown in Fig. 3.5. In all cases there are underlying narrow [O III] emission lines (FWHM \approx few hundred km s^{-1}) with small velocity gradients ($\Delta v \lesssim 200 \text{ km s}^{-1}$) which we associate with galaxy dynamics and merger remnants. Broad [O III] emission lines (FWHM $\approx 700\text{--}1400 \text{ km s}^{-1}$) are offset from these galaxy kinematics which we interpret as energetic outflows. The error bars are representative 1σ uncertainties for the [O III] measurements. The *horizontal solid lines* indicate the approximate uncertainties in the spatial positions of the measurements when applicable. The *dotted lines* indicate zero velocity using the redshift of the narrowest [O III] components in the galaxy-integrated spectra (Fig. 3.3)

emission lines from the systemic, as the velocity differences between the broad and narrow [O III] emission lines in the spectra extracted from the broad [O III] regions (see Fig. 3.5 and Table 3.4). For SMMJ0217–0503 and RGJ0332–2732 we use the velocity offset to the narrow $H\alpha$ emission, as no narrow [O III] emission is observed. For SMM1636+4057 we use half of the velocity offset between the two broad components, which is also consistent with the offset between each component and the velocity of the $H\alpha$ broad-line region.

3.6 Discussion

Our IFU observations of eight $z = 1.4\text{--}3.4$ ULIRGs that host AGN activity have revealed extreme gas kinematics with very broad [O III] emission (FWHM $\approx 700\text{--}1400 \text{ km s}^{-1}$), extended up to 15 kpc and with high-velocity offsets, up to $\approx 850 \text{ km s}^{-1}$. We have also identified narrow [O III] emission lines with moderate widths and velocity gradients (FWHM $\lesssim 500 \text{ km s}^{-1}$; $\Delta v \lesssim 200 \text{ km s}^{-1}$) over the full extent of the observed emission-line regions (up to ≈ 20 kpc). In the following discussion, we focus on the six sources for which we have high-quality spatially-resolved data and show that the narrow emission lines are consistent with tracing galaxy-dynamics and mergers, while the broadest emission lines are consistent with being predominantly due to energetic outflows. We then go on to discuss the impact that these outflows could be having on the future growth of the central BHs and host galaxies and the implications of these results for the formation of massive galaxies.

3.6.1 Tracing Galaxy Dynamics, Mergers and Outflows

In six of our sources we find an extended [O III] emission-line region (up to ≈ 20 kpc; Fig. 3.4), which are often found in gas-rich systems containing luminous AGN (e.g., Colina et al. 1999; Nesvadba et al. 2008; Greene et al. 2011; Villar-Martín et al. 2011b; Matsuoka 2012). The presence of these emission-line regions enables us to trace the kinematics of the ionised gas in these galaxies.

We identified narrow [O III] emission (FWHM up to a few $\times 100$ km s $^{-1}$) with irregular velocity profiles and small velocity gradients ($\Delta v \lesssim 200$ km s $^{-1}$) over the full extent of the emission-line regions (Figs. 3.4 and 3.6). The line widths and velocity offsets observed in this narrow [O III] emission are similar to the kinematics of gas found in simulated merger remnants (Cox et al. 2006). The kinematics of these narrow emission lines are also broadly consistent with other high-redshift star-forming galaxies that have similar radio-luminosities, many of which are also undergoing mergers (e.g., Swinbank et al. 2004; Nesvadba et al. 2007b; Lehnert et al. 2009; Alaghband-Zadeh et al. 2012) as well as nearby ULIRGs (e.g., Colina et al. 2005). To illustrate this, in Fig. 3.7, we compare the galaxy-integrated emission-line FWHMs of our AGN sample to the H α emission line FWHM in other high-redshift ULIRGs from Swinbank et al. (2004) and Alaghband-Zadeh et al. (2012).

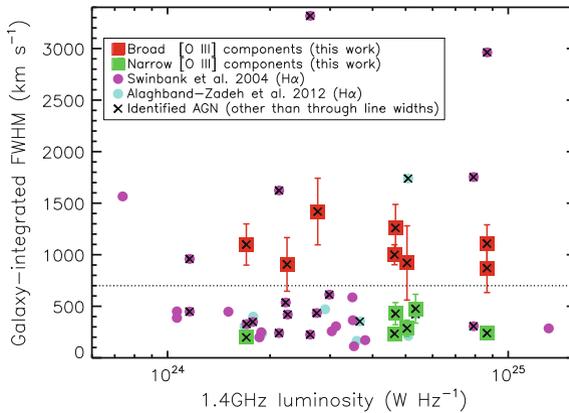


Fig. 3.7 The [O III] FWHM from the galaxy-integrated spectra of our eight [O III] detected targets and high-redshift ULIRGs from the literature versus 1.4GHz radio luminosity. Both broad components (FWHM $\gtrsim 700$ km s $^{-1}$; dashed line) and narrow components of the profile fits have been plotted (see Table 3.3). For SMMJ0217–0503 we have plotted the northern and southern systems separately (see Table 3.4). We also plot the galaxy integrated H α FWHMs from other high-redshift ULIRGs with similar radio luminosities (Swinbank et al. 2004; Alaghband-Zadeh et al. 2012). The sources that are identified as AGN (using methods not based on emission-lines widths), have been highlighted (see Sect. 3.6.1 for details). The non-AGN ULIRGs have FWHMs that lie below ≈ 700 km s $^{-1}$. The narrow [O III] components of our sample are consistent with the emission-lines widths from non-AGN ULIRGs and presumably trace galaxy dynamics and mergers while the broadest components appear to be constrained to the AGN host galaxies and are likely to be tracing AGN-driven outflows

We highlight sources that are identified as AGN on the basis of their emission-line flux ratios, X-ray emission, UV spectral features or their mid-infrared spectra. Figure 3.7 shows that the narrow [O III] emission lines ($\text{FWHM} \lesssim 500 \text{ km s}^{-1}$) in our sources are comparable to the emission-line widths of non-AGN high-redshift ULIRGs and therefore are likely to be tracing the same kinematic components seen in these sources (i.e., galaxy dynamics and mergers). The velocity structure of the emission lines seen in the IFU data of the non-AGN ULIRGs (Alaghband-Zadeh et al. 2012) are also similar to the narrow [O III] components observed here. In particular, for the two sources where there are IFU observations covering both the [O III] and $\text{H}\alpha$ emission lines (SMMJ0217-0503 and RGJ0332-2732; this work and Alaghband-Zadeh et al. 2012) the kinematics of the narrow [O III] and $\text{H}\alpha$ emission-line components are roughly consistent (e.g., see Fig. 3.5).

In contrast to the narrow emission lines, the identification of broad emission lines ($\text{FWHM} \gtrsim 700 \text{ km s}^{-1}$) in the galaxy integrated spectra of high-redshift ULIRGs appears to be constrained to galaxies that contain known AGN activity (Fig. 3.7).² This is in agreement with studies of low-redshift ULIRGs where the broadest emission lines are found in systems hosting powerful AGN activity (e.g., Veilleux et al. 1999; Zheng et al. 2002; Westmoquette et al. 2012). Although broad emission-line components may be found in non-AGN high-redshift star-forming galaxies, they are generally faint and are difficult to identify other than by stacking the spectra of multiple sources or with excellent quality data (e.g., Swinbank et al. 2004; Nesvadba et al. 2007b; Le Tiran et al. 2011). However, we note that we are basing these arguments on small samples of galaxies which are biased in their selection, and to fully address if bright and broad emission lines, such as those in our sources, are unique to galaxies hosting AGN activity, requires larger systematic samples of spectra and IFU data. In addition to comparisons with the literature, there is further evidence that the broadest emission lines are associated with AGN activity in our sample. The broadest emission lines are found to be spatially co-incident with the most likely location of the AGN in these galaxies based on very high [O III]/ $\text{H}\beta$ emission-line ratios (see Sect. 3.5.3). The most striking example of this is the source SMMJ1636+4057 where the broadest [O III] emission lines are found to be co-spatial with the AGN, and not in the region of unobscured star formation.

Broad and asymmetric [O III] $\lambda\lambda 4959, 5007$ emission-line profiles, such as those found in this work, are most commonly attributed to high-velocity outflowing gas (e.g., Heckman et al. 1981; Greene and Ho 2005; Barth et al. 2008; Nesvadba et al. 2008; Greene et al. 2011). In particular, IFU observations of local ULIRGs that host AGN activity reveal broad and spatially extended emission lines (similar to those that we observe) associated with energetic outflows (Rupke and Veilleux 2011; Westmoquette et al. 2012). On the basis of the above arguments the broadest kinematic components ($\text{FWHM} \gtrsim 700 \text{ km s}^{-1}$) appear to be associated with AGN activity and

²The one source from Swinbank et al. (2004) with $\text{FWHM} > 700 \text{ km s}^{-1}$ that is not identified as an AGN (Fig. 3.7) has a complex spectrum and has not been covered by multi-wavelength observations in the literature. It is therefore not possible to rule out the presence of a significant AGN in this galaxy.

therefore do not appear to be the result of mergers and galaxy dynamics or even (as we will further argue below) star-formation driven outflows, and therefore AGN-driven outflows is the most natural explanation. We find convincing evidence for extended ($\gtrsim 4$ kpc) outflows in four of our sample (RG J0302+0010; SMM J0943+4700; SMM J1237+6203 and SMM J1636+4057). The source RG J0332-2732 only has very broad [O III] emission lines in the most central regions, and the broad [O III] emission line in the source SMM J0217-0503 has a low signal-to-noise ratio and is spatially unresolved. These two sources have lower quality data than the other four spatially extended sources and the evidence for spatially-extended outflows in these objects is weaker.

3.6.2 Outflow Properties

We can use the measured properties of the broad [O III] emission to place constraints on the outflow properties. In Fig. 3.8 we plot the observed spatial extent of the broad [O III] emission lines against the velocity offset from the systemic redshifts

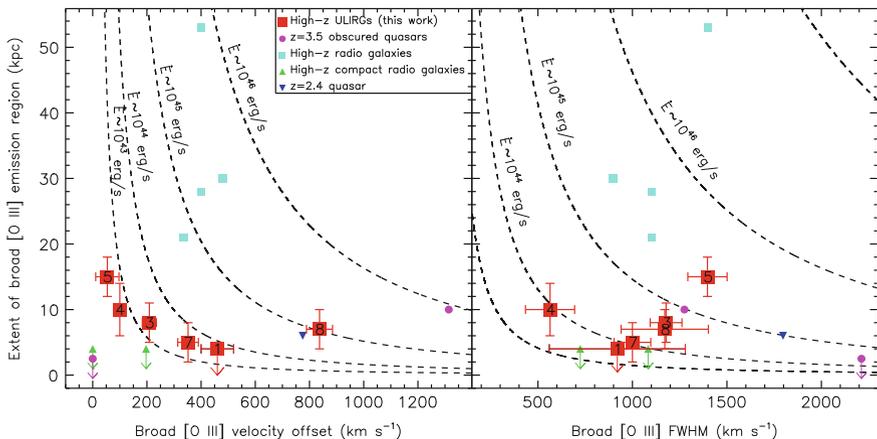


Fig. 3.8 The projected spatial-extent of the broad [O III] emission-line regions against velocity offset from the systemic redshift (*left*) and FWHM (*right*) for our spatially resolved sources (see Tables 3.3 and 3.4). The numbers inside the symbols correspond to the source IDs. Also shown are other high-redshift sources with IFU data (symbols are the same as in Fig. 3.1). If two sides of an outflow are observed, half of the velocity difference between them is used, and the average FWHM of each side. For spatially unresolved data we use the seeing disk as an upper limit of the extent. For illustrative purposes, the *dashed lines* show the expected energy injection rates (\dot{E}) using a simple outflow model (see Sect. 3.6.2 for details). Strong evidence for extended outflows is not confirmed for source IDs 1 and 4 (see Sect. 3.6.1). Despite 3–4 magnitudes difference in radio luminosities, HzRGs and high-redshift ULIRGs containing AGN activity have comparable velocity offsets and emission-line widths and are both potentially injecting energy into their host galaxies at considerable rates ($\approx 10^{43} - 10^{46}$ erg s $^{-1}$)

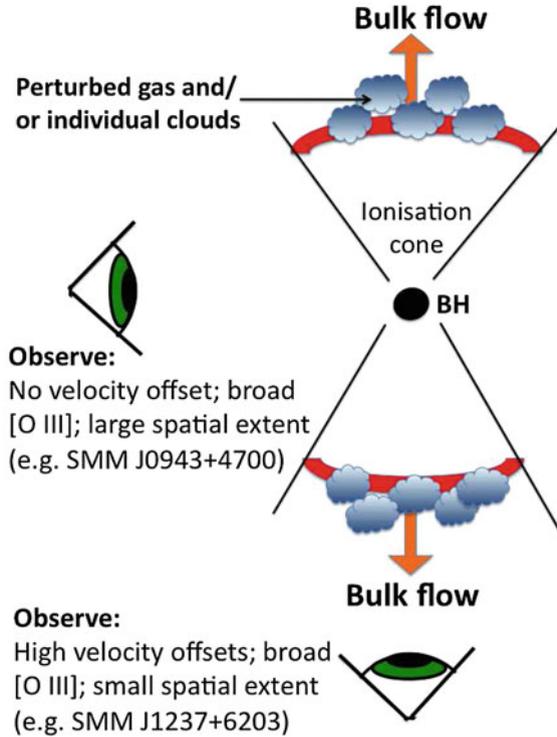


Fig. 3.9 A schematic diagram to illustrate a possible interpretation of the observations of the broad [O III] emission lines. If a fast wind is initially launched around the central BH it could sweep up clouds of gas in a bi-polar outflow (as assumed by some models e.g., Debuhr et al. 2012; Zubovas and King 2012; see Sect. 3.6.2 for more discussion). The orientation with respect to the line of sight will determine the velocity offsets and spatial extent observed; however, broad emission lines will be always be observed. This could explain the diversity in the properties of our observations. In addition, obscuring material in the host galaxy would result in parts of the outflow not being visible which could explain why in some sources we only observe either blueshifted or redshifted broad emission lines

of the host galaxies (values are from the fits to the spectra shown in Fig. 3.5 and are provided in Table 3.4).³ The dashed lines in Fig. 3.8 represent estimated energy injection rates which we discuss later. The broad [O III] emission-line properties ($\Delta v \approx 50\text{--}850 \text{ km s}^{-1}$; spatial extent $\approx 4\text{--}15 \text{ kpc}$) can be explained by the presence of an AGN-driven bi-polar outflow plus the addition of obscuring material in the host galaxy. In Fig. 3.9 we show a simple schematic diagram to attempt to explain the properties and diversity of the broad [O III] emission lines. Hydrodynamical simulations and analytical models predict that a powerful AGN-wind, launched from

³The source SMMJ1237+6203 does not appear in this table. For this source we use a spatial extent of 5 kpc (see Fig. 3.6) and the FWHM and velocity offset from the galaxy-integrated spectrum (Table 3.3). See the end of Sect. 3.5.4 for details.

the central BH, could sweep up clouds of gas, resulting in an kpc-scale outflow (e.g., Debuhr et al. 2012; Zubovas and King 2012 and references therein). Galaxy-wide outflows are thought to be expanding bubbles on either side of the host galaxy, being forced into this shape by the denser material in the centre of the host-galaxy (e.g., Zubovas and King 2012; Faucher-Giguère and Quataert 2012). As we are observing the outflow through luminous [O III] emission, the *observed* properties of the outflow will also depend on the size and orientation of the AGN ionisation cones (e.g., Crenshaw et al. 2010). Multiple clouds being caught up in the bulk flow of the outflow (e.g., Zubovas and King 2012) or perturbed ionised gas would result in broad [O III] emission lines (e.g., Villar-Martín et al. 2011a). The ‘near-side’ of the outflow would therefore be observed as a broad and blueshifted emission line and the ‘far-side’ would be observed as broad and redshifted emission line (see Fig. 3.9). However, part of the outflow could be obscured by material in the host galaxy, as is likely to be the case in clumpy and dusty systems such as high-redshift ULIRGs (e.g., Ivison et al. 2007; Tacconi et al. 2008; Engel et al. 2010). High-redshift ULIRGs are kinematically disturbed, potentially resulting in a complex distribution of obscuring material, which, along with the relative orientation of the AGN, could explain why in some cases we only see either a blueshifted (i.e., when only the near-side of the outflow is observed) or redshifted broad emission line (i.e., when only the far-side of the outflow is observed; also see Figs. 6 and 7 in Crenshaw et al. 2010).

The range in spatial extents and velocity offsets of the implied outflows that we observe (Fig. 3.8) can also be explained using this simple model (Fig. 3.9). The *observed* velocity offsets and *observed* spatial extents will be highly dependent on the orientation of the outflow with respect to the line of sight. If the axis of the outflow is orientated along the line of sight, high velocity offsets and a small spatial extent would be observed (e.g., this could explain the properties of SMMJ1636+4057). Conversely, if the axis of the outflow is in the plane of the sky, a small velocity offset and a large spatial extent would be observed (e.g., this could explain the properties of SMMJ0943+4700). In contrast, the observed FWHM will be less dependent on the orientation. We emphasise that this is a very simplified model and other interpretations could also be valid. For example, the observed emission-line properties will also be dependent on the intrinsic properties of the outflow, such as their intrinsic velocity and distance travelled from the BH.

We have argued that the measured velocity offsets observed may not represent the true velocity of the outflow due to an orientation effect. We attempt to estimate corrected velocity offsets by taking the two sources which contain a known broad-line AGN (SMMJ1237+6203 and SMMJ1636+4057). In these sources the identification of the broad-line AGN component suggests that the outflow could be primarily orientated towards us and therefore the observed velocity offset is likely to be close to the true outflow velocity. For these two sources we find that the average of $\text{FWHM}/\Delta v$ is ≈ 2 ; reassuringly we also find a median ratio of $\text{FWHM}/\Delta v \approx 2$ for low-redshift broad-line AGN that display [O III] properties indicative of outflows (data from Mullaney et al. 2013). We therefore suggest that $\text{FWHM}/2$ may be an adequate approximation of the true outflow rate, although subject to large uncertainties. Using this as a diagnostic, we estimate bulk outflow velocities in the

range of $\approx 300\text{--}700\text{ km s}^{-1}$, which are similar to the predicted kpc-scale outflow velocities predicted by hydrodynamical simulations and analytical models of outflows ($\approx 300\text{--}1500\text{ km s}^{-1}$), driven by AGN in objects with similar properties to the sources in our sample (i.e., ULIRGs, with $L_{\text{AGN}} \approx 10^{46}\text{ erg s}^{-1}$; Debuhr et al. 2012; Zubovas and King 2012; Faucher-Giguère and Quataert 2012).

3.6.2.1 Estimating Outflow Energy Rates and Determining What is Powering the Outflows

To attempt to quantify the impact the outflows may be having on the host galaxies we consider approaches to estimate the energy injection rates into the ISM. We do not have good constraints on the mass of the gas entrained in the outflows or on the geometry of the outflow, making such estimates uncertain. For illustrative purposes, we consider the energy injection rates assuming an energy conserving bubble into a uniform medium (see Equation A.4.11 and Appendix A). We assume the radius of the bubble is half the extent of the observed broad [O III] emission (in units of 10 kpc), the velocities to be either the measured velocity offsets or FWHM/2 (see below and Table 3.4) and the ambient density to be $n_{0.5} = 1$.

In the left panel of Fig. 3.8 we plot on tracks indicating fixed energy injection rates using Eq. A.4.11. We have already discussed that the observed velocity offsets are unlikely to be representative of the intrinsic velocities and that FWHM/2 is plausibly a better estimate of the true outflow velocity. Therefore, in the right panel of Fig. 3.8 we plot the extent of the broad [O III] emission against FWHM and tracks of constant energy injection rates using Eq. A.4.11, but replacing the velocity offset with FWHM/2. For the two sources with a known broad-line AGN in this sample (SMMJ1237+6203 and SMMJ1636+4057) and the sources with broad-line AGN in the comparison samples (i.e. Nesvadba et al. 2006; Cano-Díaz et al. 2012), the two diagnostics for the bulk outflow velocity give energy injection rates that are consistent within a factor of a few. We establish that the spatially extended outflows in these high-redshift ULIRGs are potentially injecting energy into their host galaxies at considerable rates of $\approx (0.08\text{--}3) \times 10^{45}\text{ erg s}^{-1}$, where the range indicates the values for different sources. Over a typical AGN lifetime of 30 Myr (e.g., Hopkins et al. 2005) the total energy injection would be of order $\approx (0.8\text{--}28) \times 10^{59}\text{ ergs}$; however, we note that outflows could continue ~ 10 times longer than the active time of the BH (King et al. 2011) which would increase this energy injection by another order of magnitude. These outflow energy injection rates are comparable to the typical binding energy of the host galaxies in these systems of $\approx 10^{59}\text{ ergs}$ (assuming a spheroid mass of $\approx 10^{11}\text{ M}_{\odot}$, a velocity dispersion $\sigma \approx 200\text{ km s}^{-1}$ and $R_e = 4\text{ kpc}$; e.g., Binney and Tremaine 1987) and demonstrate that these outflows could unbind at least a fraction of the ISM from the host galaxies.

We next consider what could be powering the outflows based on energetic arguments. In Fig. 3.10 we compare the ratio of the outflow energy rates with the energy input rates from: (1) the radiative output of the AGN (i.e. the AGN bolometric luminosity; L_{AGN}) and (2) energy output from star formation (\dot{E}_{SF}). We calculate outflow

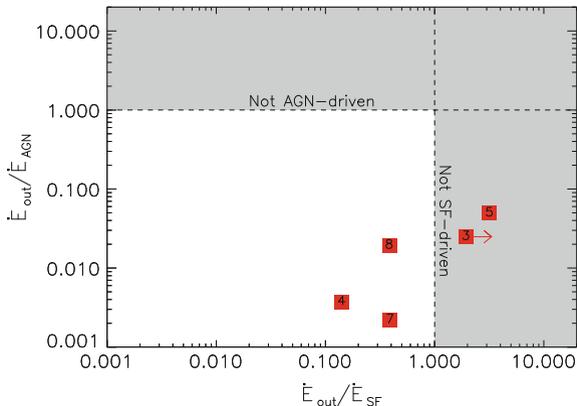


Fig. 3.10 The ratio of the estimated outflow energy rate (\dot{E}_{out}) to the derived input energy rate from AGN (\dot{E}_{AGN}) against the ratio of the outflow energy rate to the predicted energy input rate from star formation (\dot{E}_{SF}) for five of the six sources with spatially resolved [O III] emission. For the sixth source we only have upper limits for both \dot{E}_{AGN} and \dot{E}_{out} and therefore have no constraints on the ratio of these quantities. The numbers inside the symbols correspond to the source IDs. We note that we lack strong evidence for extended outflows for the source with ID 4 (see Sect. 3.6.1.) The shaded regions indicate where a $>100\%$ coupling efficiency is required between the input energy and the gas to power the outflows, effectively ruling out such an input energy mechanism. The bolometric luminosity of the AGN appears to be energetically favourable to power all the outflows requiring only $\approx 0.2\text{--}5\%$ of the bolometric output to couple to the gas; however, star formation cannot be ruled out in all cases. It should be noted that the values used rely heavily on assumptions and should be taken as illustrative only. Details of the derived values that are plotted are provided in Sect. 3.6.2 (also see Table 3.2)

energy injection rates using Eq. A.4.11, replacing v with FWHM/2 and r as half the spatial extent of the broad [O III] region (see Table 3.4; also see footnote 3). We have estimated the bolometric luminosity of the AGN using SED modelling (described in Sect. 3.4; values given in Table 3.2). We estimate the potential energy input from star-formation using the star formation rates from our SED modelling (Table 3.2) and assuming that the mechanical energy injection from supernovae and stellar winds would be at most $\approx 7 \times 10^{41} (SFR/M_{\odot} \text{ yr}^{-1}) \text{ erg s}^{-1}$ (following Leitherer et al. 1999 and Veilleux et al. 2005).⁴ We note that the assumptions made are highly idealistic, and we have not, for example, considered the case of a momentum conserving outflow. However, Nesvadba et al. (2006, 2008) follow several methods to estimate the energy injection in similar outflows in HzRGs and find that the different methods generally agree on the order of magnitude level (also see Veilleux et al. 2005 for

⁴If we were to follow instead Dalla Vecchia and Schaye (2008) to estimate this energy input, the values would be a factor of ≈ 2 lower. Conversely, radiation pressure from star-formation could potentially contribute a comparable amount of pressure to stellar and supernovae winds in ULIRGs (Veilleux et al. 2005). As we are considering order of magnitude estimates only, these uncertainties do not affect our conclusions.

further discussion on the energetics of outflows and the potential energy input from star formation and AGN activity).

Figure 3.10 demonstrates that the radiative output of the AGN is energetically viable as the dominant power source of the outflows observed in all of these sources. Assuming the bolometric luminosity provides an estimate of the initial energy input from the AGN, so long as $\approx 0.2\text{--}5\%$ of this energy can couple to the ISM, the radiative power of the AGN in these systems is large enough to drive the observed outflows. This range of coupling efficiencies is similar to the values required by many models to reproduce the properties of local massive galaxies (e.g., Springel et al. 2005; Di Matteo et al. 2005; Debuhr et al. 2012). In contrast, the required coupling efficiencies for star formation are an order of magnitude higher (≈ 15 to $\gg 100\%$). For the three sources with implied coupling efficiencies of $\approx 15\text{--}50\%$ star formation may play a significant role; however, based on the observed properties of the broad [O III] emission presented earlier (see Sect. 3.6.1), and the energetic arguments presented here, we tentatively suggest that the AGN may play a dominant role in powering the outflows. Given the current quality of the available data, a more detailed analysis is not yet warranted and the values of input energetics should be used with care.

3.6.2.2 The Potential Fate of the Outflowing Gas

Based on energetic arguments we have already demonstrated that the outflows we observe are likely to unbind the gas from the host galaxies. However, many models of galaxy formation require powerful AGN-driven outflows to remove the gas completely from the host galaxy potentials to efficiently truncate star formation and remove the fuel for future accretion onto the BHs (e.g., Di Matteo et al. 2005; Hopkins et al. 2008). Will the outflowing gas we observe be able to escape the host galaxy and consequently remove the gas supply for further star formation and future accretion? In Fig. 3.11 we plot the broad [O III] velocity offset against FWHM for our spatially resolved sources and also plot other high-redshift AGN with available IFU data from the literature. By taking an estimated galaxy mass of $10^{11} M_{\odot}$ (typical of these sources; e.g., Engel et al. 2010; Wardlow et al. 2011; Hainline et al. 2011) the escape velocity at a distance of 4 kpc would be $v_{\text{esc}} \approx 460 \text{ km s}^{-1}$ (see Fig. 3.11). Considering the observed velocity offsets ($\Delta v = 50\text{--}850 \text{ km s}^{-1}$), only the outflows in two sources (SMMJ1636+4057 and SMMJ0217–0503) appear likely to exceed this escape velocity. However, if we instead consider the *maximum* velocities of the emission-line gas ($v_{\text{max}} \approx 400\text{--}1400 \text{ km s}^{-1}$; defined as $v_{\text{max}} = |v| + \text{FWHM}/2$; i.e., Rupke et al. 2005a, b) then the outflow velocities are found to exceed the escape velocity (see dashed curve in Fig. 3.11) in all sources except RGJ0332–2732, suggesting that some fraction of the gas is able to escape the host galaxy potential.

Unless the gas is completely removed from the host galaxy potential, or is unable to cool on short timescales, significant star formation and BH accretion may be able to recommence after the outflow episode. We therefore consider a simplified approach to investigate if the outflowing gas will be able to escape the dark-matter halo. Assuming a static dark matter halo with a mass of $\approx 10^{13} M_{\odot}$ (expected for

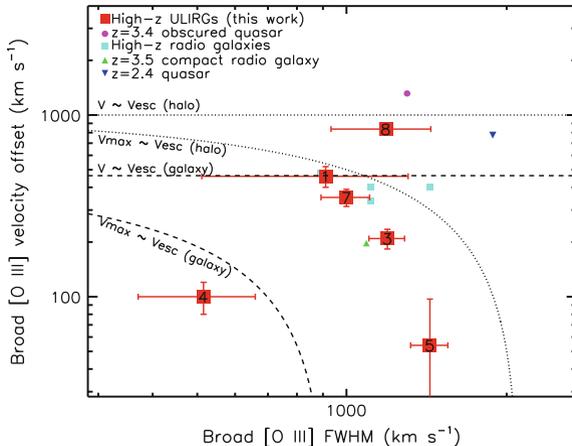


Fig. 3.11 Broad [O III] emission-line velocity offset versus FWHM for the spatially resolved sources in our sample (values taken from regions of broad [O III]; see Table 3.4). Also shown are other high-redshift sources with IFU data as described in Fig. 3.1. The maximum velocities ($v_{\max} = |v| + \frac{1}{2}\text{FWHM}$) of the gas are potentially high enough to exceed the typical escape velocity of a typical massive galaxy ($10^{11} M_{\odot}$ at 4kpc; *dashed curve*). However, using simplistic arguments (see Sect. 3.6.2) only one of our sources has a maximum outflow velocity that could potentially unbind some of the gas from a typical galaxy halo ($\approx 10^{13} M_{\odot}$ at ≈ 4 kpc; *dotted curve*)

these sources; Hickox et al. 2012), a Navarro Frenk and White (NFW; Navarro et al. 1996) density profile, and a point mass of $\approx 10^{11} M_{\odot}$ (i.e., the host galaxy), a particle initially at ≈ 4 kpc from the centre of the host galaxy would need to be travelling at $v \approx 1000 \text{ km s}^{-1}$ to escape beyond the virial radius of the halo (≈ 440 kpc; M. Lovell priv. comm.; see Fig. 3.11). On the basis of this simple model, where we assume the effects of gravity only, particles travelling at $\approx 400\text{--}800 \text{ km s}^{-1}$ at ≈ 4 kpc will return to the host galaxy within a few hundred Myrs. From this analysis only one sources has a maximum outflow velocity that could potentially unbind some fraction of the gas from the dark matter halo (Fig. 3.11), which suggests that the gas in the majority of the systems may eventually cool and re-ignite another episode of AGN activity and star formation. However, it has been proposed that *quasar mode* outflows, such as those observed here, may be an effective way of expelling the gas at early times prior to a mechanical-heating dominated phase (i.e., the so-called *radio mode*), which will then efficiently prevent the gas from cooling (e.g., van de Voort et al. 2011; McCarthy et al. 2011). The outflows we observe could be a means of energetically pre-heating and ejecting gas at high redshift and therefore could be a crucial stage in the evolution of massive galaxies. In this scenario these galaxies will therefore be the progenitors of the radiatively weak, low-redshift AGN in massive galaxies which are observed to have mechanical heating that is preventing gas from cooling (Best et al. 2005, 2006; Smolčić et al. 2009; Danielson et al. 2012).

3.7 Conclusions

In this chapter we aimed answer the question: *can high-redshift AGN drive galaxy-wide outflows of ionised gas in the absence of extremely powerful radio jets?* This was a fundamental question to ask because they are key prediction of most successful galaxy evolution models. Using observations of high-redshift galaxies that host AGN, but do not host extremely powerful radio jets, we have demonstrated that the answer to this question is simply *yes*. We obtained IFU observations of the emission-line doublet [O III] λ 4959, 5007 of eight high-redshift ULIRGs that host AGN activity, but have representative radio luminosities. Our aim was to identify galaxy-wide ionised outflows, by searching for broad, high-velocity and spatially extended [O III] emission. By using the [O III] λ 4959, 5007 emission-line doublet as a tracer of the ionised gas, we were able to make a variety of measurements to constrain the properties of outflows in these systems. Our main conclusions are the following:

1. We find narrow [O III] emission lines (FWHM \approx few hundred km s^{-1}) extended over galaxy-wide scales (up to ≈ 20 kpc). These narrow emission lines are common in other high-redshift ULIRGs that do not host AGN activity and are attributed to galaxy kinematics such as galactic rotation and mergers (Sect. 3.6.1).
2. In the four ULIRGs hosting the most powerful AGN (i.e., the most luminous), we find extremely broad [O III] λ 4959,5007 emission-line profiles (FWHM ≈ 700 – 1400 km s^{-1}) with high velocity-offsets (up to $\approx 850 \text{ km s}^{-1}$). These are the key signatures of ionised outflows. We find that these outflows are extended over ≈ 4 – 15 kpc and therefore, indicate that they are found over the extents of the host galaxies (Sect. 3.6.1). The other four sources exhibit the signatures of ionised outflows; however, we have limited constraints on their spatial extents due to lower quality data.
3. By applying a simple outflow model to the spatially-extended outflows, we show that the outflows are potentially depositing energy into the interstellar medium of the host galaxies at considerable rates (i.e., $\approx [0.08\text{--}3] \times 10^{45} \text{ erg s}^{-1}$). We show that this is sufficient to unbind some of the gas from the host galaxy, potentially disrupting future black hole accretion and star-formation (Sect. 3.6.2.1). These order of magnitude estimates are model dependent and rely on estimates of the density and therefore should be considered as illustrative only; however, they are broadly in-line with model predictions.
4. By estimating the energy injection rates from the AGN- and star formation driven-winds we find that the outflows require ≈ 0.2 – 5% of the AGN luminosity to couple to the gas, while star formation require coupling efficiencies of 15 – $\gg 100\%$ (Sect. 3.6.2.1). By using a comparison sample of non-AGN high-redshift ULIRGs we also show that the highest velocity outflows are preferentially found in the AGN-hosting systems. These combined suggest that, although star formation may also play a significant role in some sources, the AGN activity is likely to be the dominant power source.

5. We showed that the high outflow velocities that we have observed are capable of removing some of the ionised gas from the potentials of the host galaxies. However, these velocities are insufficient to completely unbind the gas from the galaxy haloes. This would mean that the unbound gas is likely to return to the host galaxy at a later time unless this can be prevented, for example, by keeping the gas hot through repeated energetic input from the AGN (Sect. 3.6.2.2).

The galaxies observed here are two to three orders of magnitude more common than the extreme high-redshift radio galaxies that are often associated with powerful AGN large-scale outflows at high redshift. We have shown that energetic large-scale outflows are present in at least a fraction of high-redshift ULIRGs that host AGN activity, which are believed to be the progenitors of today's massive elliptical galaxies.

References

- Alaghband-Zadeh, S., Chapman, S. C., Swinbank, A. M., et al. 2012, *MNRAS*, 424, 2232
- Alexander, D. M., Bauer, F. E., Chapman, S. C., et al. 2005, *ApJ*, 632, 736
- Alexander, D. M., & Hickox, R. C. 2012, *New A Rev.*, 56, 93
- Alexander, D. M., Swinbank, A. M., Smail, I., McDermid, R., & Nesvadba, N. P. H. 2010, *MNRAS*, 402, 2211
- Alexander, D. M., Bauer, F. E., Brandt, W. N., et al. 2003, *AJ*, 125, 383
- Alexander, D. M., Brandt, W. N., Smail, I., et al. 2008, *AJ*, 135, 1968
- Barth, A. J., Greene, J. E., & Ho, L. C. 2008, *AJ*, 136, 1179
- Best, P. N., Kaiser, C. R., Heckman, T. M., & Kauffmann, G. 2006, *MNRAS*, 368, L67
- Best, P. N., Kauffmann, G., Heckman, T. M., et al. 2005, *MNRAS*, 362, 25
- Binney, J., & Tremaine, S. 1987, *Galactic dynamics*, Princeton series in astrophysics (Princeton University Press)
- Cano-Díaz, M., Maiolino, R., Marconi, A., et al. 2012, *A&A*, 537, L8
- Cardamone, C. N., van Dokkum, P. G., Urry, C. M., et al. 2010, *APJS*, 189, 270
- Cattaneo, A., & Bernardi, M. 2003, *MNRAS*, 344, 45
- Chapman, S. C., Blain, A. W., Smail, I., & Ivison, R. J. 2005, *ApJ*, 622, 772
- Chapman, S. C., Smail, I., Blain, A. W., & Ivison, R. J. 2004, *ApJ*, 614, 671
- Clements, D. L., Vaccari, M., Babbedge, T., et al. 2008, *MNRAS*, 387, 247
- Colina, L., Arribas, S., & Borne, K. D. 1999, *ApJL*, 527, L13
- Colina, L., Arribas, S., & Monreal-Ibero, A. 2005, *ApJ*, 621, 725
- Coppin, K. E. K., Swinbank, A. M., Neri, R., et al. 2008, *MNRAS*, 389, 45
- Cowie, L. L., Barger, A. J., & Kneib, J.-P. 2002, *AJ*, 123, 2197
- Cox, T. J., Dutta, S. N., Di Matteo, T., et al. 2006, *ApJ*, 650, 791
- Crenshaw, D. M., Schmitt, H. R., Kraemer, S. B., Mushotzky, R. F., & Dunn, J. P. 2010, *ApJ*, 708, 419
- Dalla Vecchia, C., & Schaye, J. 2008, *MNRAS*, 387, 1431
- Danielson, A. L. R., Lehmer, B. D., Alexander, D. M., et al. 2012, *MNRAS*, 422, 494
- Debuhr, J., Quataert, E., & Ma, C.-P. 2012, *MNRAS*, 420, 2221
- Del Moro, A., Alexander, D. M., Mullaney, J. R., et al. 2013, *A&A*, 549, A59
- Di Matteo, T., Springel, V., & Hernquist, L. 2005, *Nature*, 433, 604
- Dimitrijević, M. S., Popović, L. Č., Kovačević, J., Dačić, M., & Ilić, D. 2007, *MNRAS*, 374, 1181
- Engel, H., Tacconi, L. J., Davies, R. I., et al. 2010, *ApJ*, 724, 233
- Faucher-Giguère, C.-A., & Quataert, E. 2012, *MNRAS*, 425, 605
- Greene, J. E., & Ho, L. C. 2005, *ApJ*, 627, 721

- Greene, J. E., Zakamska, N. L., Ho, L. C., & Barth, A. J. 2011, *ApJ*, 732, 9
- Hainline, L. J., Blain, A. W., Smail, I., et al. 2011, *ApJ*, 740, 96
- Hainline, L. J., Blain, A. W., Smail, I., et al. 2009, *ApJ*, 699, 1610
- Harrison, C. M., Alexander, D. M., Swinbank, A. M., et al. 2012, *MNRAS*, 426, 1073
- Heckman, T. M., Kauffmann, G., Brinchmann, J., et al. 2004, *ApJ*, 613, 109
- Heckman, T. M., Miley, G. K., van Breugel, W. J. M., & Butcher, H. R. 1981, *ApJ*, 247, 403
- Helou, G., Soifer, B. T., & Rowan-Robinson, M. 1985, *ApJL*, 298, L7
- Hickox, R. C., Hardlow, J. L., Smail, I., et al. 2012, *MNRAS*, 421, 284
- Hopkins, P. F., Hernquist, L., Cox, T. J., et al. 2006, *APJS*, 163, 1
- Hopkins, P. F., Hernquist, L., Cox, T. J., & Kereš, D. 2008, *APJS*, 175, 356
- Hopkins, P. F., Hernquist, L., Martini, P., et al. 2005, *ApJL*, 625, L71
- Hopkins, P. F., Richards, G. T., & Hernquist, L. 2007, *ApJ*, 654, 731
- Ibar, E., Ivison, R. J., Best, P. N., et al. 2010, *MNRAS*, 401, L53
- Ivison, R. J., Papadopoulos, P. P., Smail, I., et al. 2011, *MNRAS*, 412, 1913
- Ivison, R. J., Smail, I., Papadopoulos, P. P., et al. 2010, *MNRAS*, 404, 198
- Ivison, R. J., Greve, T. R., Dunlop, J. S., et al. 2007, *MNRAS*, 380, 199
- Kennicutt, Jr., R. C. 1998, *ARAA*, 36, 189
- Kewley, L. J., Groves, B., Kauffmann, G., & Heckman, T. 2006, *MNRAS*, 372, 961
- King, A. R., Zubovas, K., & Power, C. 2011, *MNRAS*, 415, L6
- Kovács, A., Chapman, S. C., Dowell, C. D., et al. 2006, *ApJ*, 650, 592
- Le Tiran, L., Lehnert, M. D., van Driel, W., Nesvadba, N. P. H., & Di Matteo, P. 2011, *A&A*, 534, L4
- Ledlow, M. J., Smail, I., Owen, F. N., et al. 2002, *ApJL*, 577, L79
- Lehnert, M. D., Nesvadba, N. P. H., Le Tiran, L., et al. 2009, *ApJ*, 699, 1660
- Leitherer, C., Schaerer, D., Goldader, J. D., et al. 1999, *APJS*, 123, 3
- Matsuoka, Y. 2012, *ApJ*, 750, 54
- McCarthy, I. G., Schaye, J., Bower, R. G., et al. 2011, *MNRAS*, 412, 1965
- Menéndez-Delmestre, K., Blain, A. W., Swinbank, M., et al. 2013, *ApJ*, 767, 151
- Menéndez-Delmestre, K., Blain, A. W., Smail, I., et al. 2009, *ApJ*, 699, 667
- Miller, N. A., Fomalont, E. B., Kellermann, K. I., et al. 2008, *APJS*, 179, 114
- Morrison, G. E., Owen, F. N., Dickinson, M., Ivison, R. J., & Ibar, E. 2010, *APJS*, 188, 178
- Mullaney, J. R., Alexander, D. M., Fine, S., et al. 2013, *MNRAS*, 433, 622
- Navarro, J. F., Frenk, C. S., & White, S. D. M. 1996, *ApJ*, 462, 563
- Nesvadba, N. P. H., Lehnert, M. D., De Breuck, C., Gilbert, A., & van Breugel, W. 2007a, *A&A*, 475, 145
- Nesvadba, N. P. H., Lehnert, M. D., De Breuck, C., Gilbert, A. M., & van Breugel, W. 2008, *A&A*, 491, 407
- Nesvadba, N. P. H., Lehnert, M. D., Eisenhauer, F., et al. 2006, *ApJ*, 650, 693
- Nesvadba, N. P. H., Polletta, M., Lehnert, M. D., et al. 2011, *MNRAS*, 415, 2359
- Nesvadba, N. P. H., Lehnert, M. D., Genzel, R., et al. 2007b, *ApJ*, 657, 725
- Rafferty, D. A., Brandt, W. N., Alexander, D. M., et al. 2011, *ApJ*, 742, 3
- Rupke, D. S., Veilleux, S., & Sanders, D. B. 2005a, *APJS*, 160, 87
- Rupke, D. S., Veilleux, S., & Sanders, D. B. 2005b, *APJS*, 160, 115
- Rupke, D. S. N., & Veilleux, S. 2011, *ApJL*, 729, L27+
- Sanders, D. B., Soifer, B. T., Elias, J. H., Neugebauer, G., & Matthews, K. 1988, *ApJL*, 328, L35
- Silk, J., & Rees, M. J. 1998, *A&A*, 331, L1
- Silverman, J. D., Green, P. J., Barkhouse, W. A., et al. 2008, *ApJ*, 679, 118
- Simpson, C., Rawlings, S., Ivison, R., et al. 2012, *MNRAS*, 421, 3060
- Simpson, J., Swinbank, M., Smail, I., et al. 2014, *ApJ*, 788
- Smail, I., Chapman, S. C., Ivison, R. J., et al. 2003, *MNRAS*, 342, 1185
- Smolčić, V., Zamorani, G., Schinnerer, E., et al. 2009, *ApJ*, 696, 24
- Springel, V., Di Matteo, T., & Hernquist, L. 2005, *MNRAS*, 361, 776
- Swinbank, A. M., Chapman, S. C., Smail, I., et al. 2006, *MNRAS*, 371, 465

- Swinbank, A. M., Smail, I., Chapman, S. C., et al. 2004, *ApJ*, 617, 64
- Swinbank, A. M., Smail, I., Bower, R. G., et al. 2005, *MNRAS*, 359, 401
- Tacconi, L. J., Genzel, R., Smail, I., et al. 2008, *ApJ*, 680, 246
- Takata, T., Sekiguchi, K., Smail, I., et al. 2006, *ApJ*, 651, 713
- Valiante, E., Lutz, D., Sturm, E., et al. 2007, *ApJ*, 660, 1060
- van de Voort, F., Schaye, J., Booth, C. M., & Dalla Vecchia, C. 2011, *MNRAS*, 415, 2782
- Veilleux, S., Cecil, G., & Bland-Hawthorn, J. 2005, *ARAA*, 43, 769
- Veilleux, S., Kim, D.-C., & Sanders, D. B. 1999, *ApJ*, 522, 113
- Villar-Martín, M., Humphrey, A., Delgado, R. G., Colina, L., & Arribas, S. 2011a, *MNRAS*, 418, 2032
- Villar-Martín, M., Tadhunter, C., Humphrey, A., et al. 2011b, *MNRAS*, 416, 262
- Wang, S. X., Brandt, W. N., Luo, B., et al. 2013, *ApJ*, 778, 179
- Wardlow, J. L., Smail, I., Coppin, K. E. K., et al. 2011, *MNRAS*, 415, 1479
- Westmoquette, M. S., Clements, D. L., Bendo, G. J., & Khan, S. A. 2012, *MNRAS*, 424, 416
- Willott, C. J., Rawlings, S., Blundell, K. M., & Lacy, M. 1998, *MNRAS*, 300, 625
- Wright, E. L., Eisenhardt, P. R. M., Mainzer, A. K., et al. 2010, *AJ*, 140, 1868
- Zheng, X. Z., Xia, X. Y., Mao, S., Wu, H., & Deng, Z. G. 2002, *AJ*, 124, 18
- Zubovas, K., & King, A. 2012, *ApJL*, 745, L34

Chapter 4

Kiloparsec Scale Outflows Are Prevalent in Luminous AGN: Outflows and Feedback in the Context of the Overall AGN Population

Abstract In this chapter we aim to address the question: how common are kiloparsec scale ionised outflows in the host galaxies of powerful active galactic nuclei (AGN; i.e., quasars) and what are their properties (e.g., spatial extents, morphologies and energetics)? We select 16 targets for spatially-resolved spectroscopy (i.e., integral field unit [IFU] observations) from a well-constrained parent sample of $\approx 24,000$ AGN. This means that we can place our observations into the context of the overall AGN population and therefore learn about the population as a whole. Our targets are $z < 0.2$ type 2 quasars that are radio-quiet, with star formation rates ($\lesssim [10\text{--}100]M_{\odot} \text{yr}^{-1}$) that are consistent with normal star-forming galaxies. We present Gemini-GMOS IFU observations covering the [O III] $\lambda\lambda 4959, 5007$ and $H\beta$ emission lines. We find high-velocity ionised gas (velocity widths $\approx 600\text{--}1500 \text{ km s}^{-1}$; maximum velocities $\leq 1700 \text{ km s}^{-1}$) with observed spatial extents of $\gtrsim (6\text{--}16) \text{ kpc}$ in all targets. We show that our targets are representative of $z < 0.2$, type 2 quasars and that ionised outflows are not only common but also in $\geq 70\%$ (3σ confidence) of cases, they are extended over kiloparsec scales. Both star formation and AGN activity appear to be energetically viable to drive the outflows and we find no definitive evidence that favours one process over the other. Although uncertain, we derive mass outflow rates (typically $\approx 10\times$ the SFRs), kinetic energies ($\approx 0.5\text{--}10\%$ of L_{AGN}) and momentum rates (typically $\gtrsim [10\text{--}20] \times L_{\text{AGN}}/c$) consistent with theoretical models that predict that AGN-driven outflows play a significant role in shaping the evolution of galaxies.

4.1 Motivation

In Sect. 1.5 of this thesis we described how galaxy-wide AGN-driven outflows are predicted to be an integral part of the evolution of massive galaxies. Whilst IFU observations have shown that galaxy-wide outflows exist in AGN and have characterised their properties, the targets selected for observations previous to this work had been drawn from small and/or inhomogeneous parent samples (see Sect. 1.5.2). Importantly, it is not known how representative these observations are of the overall AGN population. In this chapter we make use of a parent sample of $\approx 24,000$ $z < 0.4$

AGN with optical spectra to select sources for IFU observations. Therefore, these IFU observations can be placed into the context of the overall AGN population. A general introduction to this research is presented in Sect. 1.5, whilst in this chapter we only give a short introduction that is specific to the observations presented here. Significant portions of the work presented in this chapter have been published in Harrison et al. (2014); however, the text presented here has been adapted for this thesis, including an extended introduction.

4.2 Introduction

One of the main aims of the work presented in this thesis is to search for high-velocity outflowing gas in the ISM of galaxies hosting AGN activity. These outflows are predicted to exist by models of galaxy evolution (see Sect. 1.5.2) and therefore it is crucial that we observe these outflows in the real Universe and constrain how prevalent they are as well as their physical properties (such as spatial extents, velocities, mass outflow rates and energetics). In Chap. 3 we demonstrated that galaxy-wide outflows can be found in high-redshift AGN beyond the exceptionally radio luminous sources that had been the focus of much previous work. However, the work presented in that chapter was limited to small numbers of sources due to the challenges of observing high-redshift objects and using the required near-infrared wavelength observations. At low redshift it is possible to observe these same type of ionised outflows but in the optical wavebands. Observations in the optical wavebands are less challenging and also it is much easier to obtain the required depth of observations of lower redshift objects. Therefore, in this chapter, we make use of optical surveys of low redshift objects, allowing us to select objects for follow-up observations and quickly obtain large samples.

The diagnostic that is commonly used to identify outflowing ionised gas is broad and asymmetric [O III] λ 5007 emission-line profiles (see Sect. 1.5.2). Spectroscopic surveys, such as that performed by the SDSS, mean that a systematic search can be performed to measure the prevalence of these outflow features as a function of host galaxy and AGN properties. Mullaney et al. (2013) used the SDSS spectroscopic database to study the one-dimensional kinematic properties of [O III] λ 5007 by performing multi-component fitting to the optical emission-line profiles of $\approx 24,000$, $z < 0.4$ optically-selected AGN. It was therefore possible to constrain the prevalence of high-velocity features that are associated with ionised outflows, as well as to search for trends in these features as a function of AGN and host-galaxy properties.

Mullaney et al. (2013) showed that $\approx 17\%$ of the AGN have emission-line profiles that indicate that their ionised gas kinematics are *dominated* by outflows and that a considerably larger fraction are likely to host ionised outflows at lower levels. In agreement with theoretical predictions the most powerful AGN, in terms of bolometric luminosity, had the highest incidence of high velocity outflows. However, they found that the most important property for observing a high incidence of outflow features was the radio luminosity of the objects. The fraction of AGN with

ionised gas kinematics dominated by outflows increases to $\gtrsim 40\%$ for the more radio-luminous AGN (i.e., those with $L_{1.4\text{GHz}} > 10^{23} \text{ W Hz}^{-1}$). In agreement with smaller studies (e.g., Heckman et al. 1981; Whittle 1985, 1992; Gelderman and Whittle 1994; Nelson and Whittle 1996; Nesvadba et al. 2011; Kim et al. 2013; see also Greene and Ho 2005), this result shows that ionised outflows are most common in AGN that have moderate-to-high radio luminosities. However, while insightful, the origin of the radio emission is often unknown, particularly at moderate radio luminosities (i.e., $L_{1.4\text{GHz}} \approx 10^{23}\text{--}10^{24} \text{ W Hz}^{-1}$) where AGN cores, radio jets, shocks and high-levels of star formation could all contribute (e.g., Del Moro et al. 2013; Condon et al. 2013; Zakamska and Greene 2014). It is therefore vital to measure star-formation rates (SFRs) and to investigate the origin of the radio emission in the sources that host these outflows to fully interpret these results. Furthermore, the outflows presented in Mullaney et al. (2013) provide no spatial information. These one-dimensional spectra, provide no information on the spatial extents or morphologies of these outflow features. Therefore, we now exploit the well constrained parent sample presented in Mullaney et al. (2013) to obtain follow-up IFU observations. By measuring the spatially-resolved properties of the ionised gas kinematics in carefully selected sub-samples of objects, we can also understand the population as a whole.

In this chapter we are interested in measuring the prevalence, properties, and the potential impact of galaxy-wide energetic outflows. We present Gemini (South) Multi-Object Spectrograph (GMOS; Allington-Smith et al. 2002) IFU observations of sixteen $0.08 < z < 0.2$ type 2 AGN drawn from the parent sample of $\approx 24,000$ AGN from Mullaney et al. (2013). So that we can fully interpret our results, we perform SED fitting and analyse the available radio data to measure SFRs, AGN luminosities and to search for evidence of radio jets in all of our targets. In Sect. 4.3, we give details of the IFU observations, data reduction and SED fitting. In Sect. 4.4 we provide details of our analyses of the ionised gas kinematics and in Sect. 4.5 we present our results. In Sect. 4.6 we discuss our results and their implication for understanding galaxy evolution and in Sect. 4.7 we give our conclusions. We have adopted $H_0 = 71 \text{ km s}^{-1} \text{ Mpc}^{-1}$, $\Omega_M = 0.27$ and $\Omega_\Lambda = 0.73$ throughout; in this cosmology, $1''$ corresponds to $\approx 1.5\text{--}3.3 \text{ kpc}$ for the redshift range of our sample ($z = 0.08\text{--}0.2$).

4.3 Targets, Observations and Data Reduction

4.3.1 Target Selection

We are interested in studying the spatially resolved ionised gas kinematics in luminous AGN, with the aim of understanding the prevalence and properties of galaxy-wide ionised outflows. For this study, we selected sixteen $z < 0.2$ type 2 AGN from the parent catalogue of Mullaney et al. (2013) to observe with the Gemini-GMOS (South) IFU. We describe our selection criteria below (also illustrated in Fig. 4.1) and we provide a list of the targets, along with their positions and redshifts, in Table 4.1.

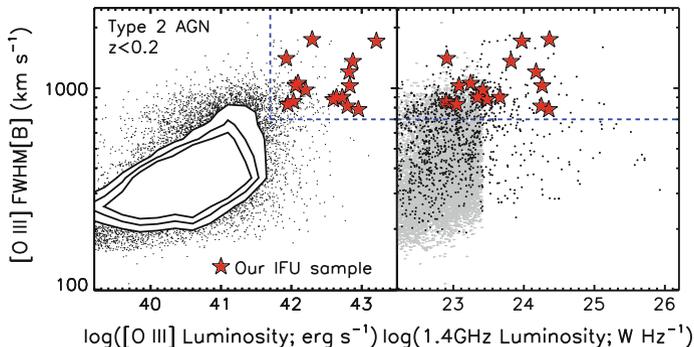


Fig. 4.1 *Left* The FWHM of the broadest, luminous (contributes at least 30% of the total flux; FWHM[B]) [O III] emission-line component versus total [O III] luminosity for our IFU targets (stars) compared to the overall population of $z < 0.2$ type 2 AGN (small data points and contours; Mullaney et al. 2013). The dashed lines show the selection criteria used to select the luminous AGN ($L_{[\text{O III}]} > 5 \times 10^{41} \text{ erg s}^{-1}$) with the spectral signatures of ionised outflows ([O III] FWHM[B] $> 700 \text{ km s}^{-1}$). *Right* FWHM[B] versus 1.4 GHz luminosity; the symbols are the same as in the left panel (with the addition of upper limits plotted in grey)

Table 4.1 Targets

Name	RA (J2000)	Dec (J2000)	Run	z_{sys}	FWHM[B]
(1)	(2)	(3)	(4)	(5)	(6)
J0945+1737	09:45:21.33	+17:37:53.2	10	0.1283	1027
J0958+1439	09:58:16.88	+14:39:23.7	10	0.1092	878
J1000+1242	10:00:13.14	+12:42:26.2	10	0.1480	815
J1010+1413	10:10:22.95	+14:13:00.9	10	0.1992	1711
J1010+0612	10:10:43.36	+06:12:01.4	10	0.0984	1743
J1100+0846	11:00:12.38	+08:46:16.3	10	0.1005	1203
J1125+1239	11:25:46.35	+12:39:22.6	12	0.1669	1028
J1130+1301	11:30:28.86	+13:01:19.6	12	0.1353	857
J1216+1417	12:16:22.73	+14:17:53.0	12	0.0818	1404
J1316+1753	13:16:42.90	+17:53:32.5	10	0.1505	1357
J1338+1503	13:38:06.53	+15:03:56.1	12	0.1857	901
J1339+1425	13:39:56.48	+14:25:29.6	12	0.1390	830
J1355+1300	13:55:45.66	+13:00:51.0	12	0.1519	1058
J1356+1026	13:56:46.10	+10:26:09.0	10	0.1238	783
J1430+1339	14:30:29.88	+13:39:12.0	10	0.0855	901
J1504+0151	15:04:20.90	+01:51:59.4	12	0.1827	978

Notes Details of the targets that we observed with the Gemini-GMOS IFU. (1) Object name; (2)–(3) optical RA and DEC positions from SDSS (DR7); (4) the Gemini-GMOS run when we observed this object (see Sect. 4.3.2); (5) systemic redshifts derived from this work (see Sect. 4.4.2); (6) FWHM (in km s^{-1}) of the broadest, luminous (contributes at least 30% of the total flux) [O III] λ 5007 emission-line component from Mullaney et al. (2013)

Our parent catalogue (Mullaney et al. 2013) contains fits to the emission-line profiles of 24264, $z < 0.4$, optical AGN (identified using a combination of “BPT” diagnostics, Baldwin et al. 1981, and emission-line widths) from the SDSS data release Data Release 7 (DR7; Abazajian et al. 2009). Mullaney et al. (2013) decompose the [O III] λ 5007 emission-line profiles into two components (“narrow” and “broad”) to identify emission-line profiles that are broad and asymmetric, indicative of outflow kinematics. A primary aim of this work is to establish if the broad and asymmetric emission-line features observed in one-dimensional spectra are spatially extended, and we therefore selected sources that have a luminous broad [O III] λ 5007 emission-line component. Our definition of a luminous broad component is one that contributes at least 30% of the total flux and has FWHM $> 700 \text{ km s}^{-1}$ (see Fig. 4.1). Additionally, we only selected sources that are classified as type 2 AGN by Mullaney et al. (2013), i.e., the permitted and forbidden lines are of similar width, implying that we cannot directly see the broad-line region in these objects (e.g., Antonucci 1993). From these, we selected the sources that have total observed [O III] luminosities of $L_{[\text{O III}]} > 5 \times 10^{41} \text{ erg s}^{-1}$ and have a redshift $z < 0.2$ to ensure sufficient emission-line flux for measuring the spatially resolved kinematics with reasonable exposure times for our IFU observations. Finally, we chose sixteen targets with celestial co-ordinates that are accessible with Gemini-South. Our final target list is given in Table 4.1. The majority of our targets have received little or no attention previously in the literature, with the exceptions of J0945+1737, J1316+1753 and J1356+1026 that have been studied in some detail.

It is important to address where our targets fit into the overall AGN population if we are to draw global conclusions from our observations. Firstly we note that our targets are all type 2 AGN, which are thought to constitute at least half of the overall AGN population (e.g., Lawrence and Elvis 2010), and that they have *observed* [O III] luminosities in the range $L_{[\text{O III}]} = 10^{41.9} - 10^{43.2} \text{ erg s}^{-1}$ (see Table 4.2) that fit the luminosity criteria for type 2 (“obscured”) quasars (i.e., $L_{[\text{O III}]} \gtrsim 10^{41.9} \text{ erg s}^{-1}$; Reyes et al. 2008). The absorption corrected [O III] luminosities of our targets have the range $L_{[\text{O III}]} = 10^{42.4} - 10^{43.2} \text{ erg s}^{-1}$ (calculated using the $\text{H}\alpha/\text{H}\beta$ emission-line flux ratios from Mullaney et al. 2013 and following Calzetti et al. 2000). Additionally, we emphasise that all of our targets are classified as “radio-quiet” in the $\nu L_\nu(1.4 \text{ GHz})$ - $L_{[\text{O III}]}$ plane (Xu et al. 1999; Zakamska et al. 2004) which make up the majority of the luminous type 2 AGN population (i.e., $\approx 90\%$ based on the sample in Zakamska et al. 2004). Furthermore, considering all galaxies at low redshift (i.e., $0.0 < z < 0.5$), the radio luminosities of our targets [i.e., $L_{1.4 \text{ GHz}} = (< 0.8 - 25) \times 10^{23} \text{ W Hz}^{-1}$] are known to be common with a space density of $\approx 10^{-4} \text{ Mpc}^{-3}$ and $\approx 10^{-5} \text{ Mpc}^{-3}$ for sources with $L_{1.4 \text{ GHz}} = 10^{23} \text{ W Hz}^{-1}$ and $L_{1.4 \text{ GHz}} = 10^{24} \text{ W Hz}^{-1}$ respectively (Simpson et al. 2012).

The key advantage of selecting our sources from a large parent sample of AGN is that we can quantitatively define how representative our targets are. In Fig. 4.2 we show histograms for the FWHM of the broad [O III] emission-line components for both the parent sample and our targets. Considering all of the type 2 AGN from Mullaney et al. (2013) with $z < 0.2$ and with an [O III] luminosity, $L_{[\text{O III}]} > 5 \times 10^{41} \text{ erg s}^{-1}$ (i.e., to match our selection criteria), we find that $45 \pm 3\%$ (246 out

Table 4.2 Target properties

Name	$\log[L_{\text{[OIII]}}]$ (erg s^{-1})	$\log[L_{\text{H}\alpha}]$ (erg s^{-1})	$S_{1.4}$ (mJy)	$\log[L_{1.4}]$ (W Hz^{-1})	θ_{FIRST}	$\text{PA}_{1.4}/R_{1.4}$ $^{\circ}$ / $''$	$\log[L_{\text{IR,SF}}]$ (erg s^{-1})	SFR ($M_{\odot} \text{ yr}^{-1}$)	$\log[L_{\text{AGN}}]$ (erg s^{-1})	q_{IR}
(1)	(2)	(3)	(4)	(5)	(6)	(7)	(8)	(9)	(10)	(11)
J0945+1737	42.83	41.80	44.5[4]	24.3	1.072[3]	112 $^{\circ}$ /2.9	45.5 $^{+0.1}$ -0.1	81 $^{+7}$ -25	45.5 $^{+0.2}$ -0.1	1.8 $^{+0.1}$ -0.1
J0958+1439	42.60	41.49	10.4[4]	23.5	1.006[9]	–	45.1 $^{+0.1}$ -0.1	36 $^{+12}$ -11	45.0 $^{+0.3}$ -0.1	2.2 $^{+0.1}$ -0.1
J1000+1242	42.80	41.84	31.8[4]	24.2	1.111[4]	158 $^{\circ}$ /3.3	45.0 $^{+0.3}$ -0.2	29 $^{+18}$ -16	45.7 $^{+0.1}$ -0.1	1.3 $^{+0.2}$ -0.2
J1010+1413	43.21	42.15	8.8[5]	24.0	1.044[13]	–	45.7 $^{+0.2}$ -0.1	122 $^{+60}$ -32	46.0 $^{+0.2}$ -0.1	2.3 $^{+0.2}$ -0.1
J1010+0612	42.30	41.48	99.3[1.3]	24.4	1.038[3]	–	44.9 $^{+0.1}$ -0.1	23 $^{+4}$ -7	45.6 $^{+0.1}$ -0.1	1.1 $^{+0.1}$ -0.1
J1100+0846	42.82	41.77	61.3[3]	24.2	1.0230[12]	–	<46.1	<365	46.0 $^{+0.1}$	<2.5
J1125+1239	42.06	40.94	1.7[5]	23.1	0.96[6]	–	<45.4	<66	45.2 $^{+0.2}$	<2.9
J1130+1301	42.03	40.88	1.7[4]	22.9	1.07[7]	122 $^{\circ}$ /5.1 ^b	44.8 $^{+0.2}$ -0.2	18 $^{+7}$ -7	45.1 $^{+0.1}$	2.5 $^{+0.2}$ -0.2
J1216+1417	41.93	–	5.1[4]	22.9	1.07[2]	97 $^{\circ}$ /2.7 ^b	<44.6	<10	45.3 $^{+0.1}$	<2.1
J1316+1753	42.87	41.81	11.4[4]	23.8	1.04[1]	–	<45.5	<77	45.4 $^{+0.1}$ -0.1	<2.2
J1338+1503	42.64	–	2.4[4]	23.3	1.06[5]	–	45.5 $^{+0.1}$ -0.1	81 $^{+13}$ -13	45.2 $^{+0.3}$	2.7 $^{+0.2}$ -0.1
J1339+1425	41.95	40.84	<3.0	<23.2	–	–	<44.9	<23	44.3 $^{+0.1}$	–
J1355+1300	42.09	41.13	3.0[5] ^a	23.2	–	–	<45.4	<62	45.7 $^{+0.1}$	<2.7
J1356+1026	42.95	41.99	59.6[4]	24.4	1.014[2]	–	45.4 $^{+0.1}$ -0.1	63 $^{+7}$ -17	45.1 $^{+0.3}$ -0.2	1.6 $^{+0.1}$ -0.1
J1430+1339	42.72	41.88	26.4[4]	23.7	1.400[9]	77 $^{\circ}$ /7.8	44.4 $^{+0.2}$ -0.2	7 $^{+3}$ -3	45.3 $^{+0.1}$	1.3 $^{+0.2}$ -0.2
J1504+0151	42.20	–	3.0[4]	23.4	1.06[4]	–	45.2 $^{+0.1}$ -0.1	44 $^{+10}$ -10	45.2 $^{+0.1}$ -0.2	2.4 $^{+0.2}$ -0.1

Notes: Details of our IFU targets that we observed with Gemini-GMOS. (1) Object name; (2)–(3) Total [O III] λ 5007 and H β luminosities derived in this work, uncertainties are typically 15%; (4) 1.4 GHz flux densities obtained from the FIRST survey (Becker et al. 1995) and uncertainties that are defined as $3 \times$ the RMS noise of the radio map at the source position; (5) Rest-frame radio luminosities using a spectral index of $\alpha = 0.7$ and assuming $S_{\nu} \propto \nu^{-\alpha}$ (we note that a range of $\alpha = 0.2$ – 1.5 introduces an spread of $\lesssim \pm 0.1$ dex on the radio luminosity); (6) Radio morphology parameter, where sources with $\theta > 1.06$ are classified as extended in the 1.4 GHz FIRST data (see Sect. 4.3.3); (7) The deconvolved PA and major-axis radius from the FIRST survey for the radio-extended sources; (8)–(10) Infrared luminosities from star-formation, SFRs and bolometric AGN luminosities derived from our SED analyses (see Sect. 4.3.3); (11) The q_{IR} (“radio excess”) parameter for each source, where sources with $q_{\text{IR}} \leq 1.8$ are classified as “radio excess” (see Sect. 4.3.3).

^aThe 1.4 GHz flux density for SDSS J355+1300 is taken from the NVSS survey (Condon et al. 1998).

^bThe uncertainty on θ is high and therefore these sources may not be truly extended in their FIRST images

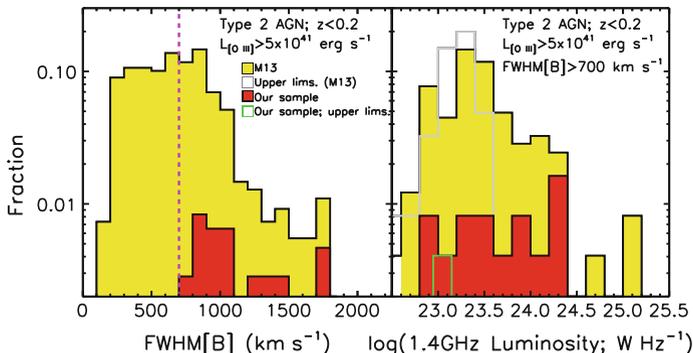


Fig. 4.2 Histograms demonstrating how representative our IFU targets are of the overall luminous ($L_{[\text{O III}]} > 5 \times 10^{41} \text{ erg s}^{-1}$) type 2 AGN population in the redshift range $z < 0.2$. *Left* Histogram of the FWHM of the broadest, luminous [O III] component (FWHM[B]; see Fig. 4.1) from Mullaney et al. (2013; M13). The filled red (darker) histogram represents the sources selected for this work and yellow (lighter) represents the parent sample. The vertical dashed line shows our selection criteria of FWHM[B] $> 700 \text{ km s}^{-1}$. *Right* Histogram of radio luminosity for the sources with FWHM[B] $> 700 \text{ km s}^{-1}$ from the parent sample (yellow; Mullaney et al. 2013) and our IFU targets (red; Table 4.2). The empty histograms represent the sources with upper-limits from the parent sample and our IFU targets. Our targets are selected from the $45 \pm 3\%$ of luminous type 2 AGN in this redshift range have luminous broad [O III] emission-line components and their radio luminosities are representative of the parent population (see Sect. 4.3.1)

of 546 sources and assuming \sqrt{N} errors) have a luminous [O III] component with FWHM[B] $> 700 \text{ km s}^{-1}$ (Fig. 4.2). This indicates that roughly half of luminous type 2 AGN have a luminous broad component to their [O III] emission-line profiles and demonstrates that our targets do not represent a rare sub-population. Additionally, this fraction can be considered a lower limit, as the fraction of sources that host weaker broad components will be considerably higher. In Fig. 4.2 we also show histograms of the radio luminosities of our targets and the type 2 AGN in the parent sample that have luminous and broad [O III] emission-line components. Our targets cover a similar range in radio luminosities to those in the parent sample, further demonstrating that our targets are representative of the parent population.

4.3.2 Gemini-South GMOS Observations and Data Reduction

The observations of our targets were performed using Gemini-South GMOS (Allington-Smith et al. 2002) in IFU mode. The GMOS IFU is described in Sect. 2.1.3. The emission-line profiles of our targets are typically non-Gaussian and the non-parametric line-widths we quote (see Sect. 4.4.1) are very large ($\gtrsim 500 \text{ km s}^{-1}$); therefore, we do not correct for this instrumental broadening. This will result

in the quoted line-width measurements being broadened by $\lesssim 2\%$. The observations were undertaken during two observing programmes: GS-2010A-Q-8 (PI: Mul-laney) taken between 2010 February 09 and 2010 March 19, and GS-2012A-Q-21 (PI: Harrison) taken between 2012 February 16 and 2012 June 26. For the observations in the 2012A run, the on-source exposures for each target consisted of 6×1500 s, while for the 2010A run, that covered the brighter targets, the exposure times consisted of 4×1300 s. Table 4.1 indicates during which run each target was observed. The observations were performed with V -band seeing of $\lesssim 0.8$ arcsec.

We reduced the data using the standard Gemini IRAF GMOS pipeline, along with dedicated IDL routines to perform the steps of data reduction, as described in Sect. 2.1.4. This provides a pixel scale of $0.''17 \times 0.''2$. Flux calibration involved reducing standard star observations in an identical manner to the targets and consequently obtaining the instrumental response. We then used the SDSS spectra to find the absolute flux calibration using a low order polynomial to the emission-line free SDSS spectrum and also an emission-line free spectrum extracted from our IFU data cubes over the same spatial region as covered by the SDSS fibres (i.e., $\approx 3''$ diameter). We estimate a conservative uncertainty of 15% on the absolute flux calibration using this process (see Abazajian et al. 2009 and Liu et al. 2013a)

We aligned SDSS three-colour images to our IFU data by matching the surface brightness peak in the g -band SDSS images to the surface brightness peak of images constructed from our IFU data cubes, collapsed around $\approx 5000 \text{ \AA}$.

4.3.3 *SFRs, AGN Luminosities and the Origin of the Radio Emission*

To thoroughly interpret our results we investigate the properties of the AGN and host galaxies of our targets in more detail (i.e., we measure SFRs and AGN luminosities and explore the origin of the radio emission). To obtain the bolometric AGN luminosities and SFRs of our targets (see Table 4.2) we performed mid-infrared to far-infrared SED fitting to archival photometric data that is available for our targets. Our procedure decomposes the emission from AGN activity and star-formation, so that we do not need to make any assumptions about the relative contribution from these two processes. At the end of this sub-section, we also briefly investigate the possible presence of radio AGN activity (i.e., radio cores or radio jets) in our targets by combining the results of our SED fitting with archival radio data.

For our SED fitting, we obtained mid-infrared to far-infrared photometric flux densities, uncertainties and upper limits (over $3\text{--}100 \mu\text{m}$; see Table 4.3) from (1) the Wide-field Infrared Survey Explorer all-sky survey (WISE; Wright et al. 2010) using the closest source to the SDSS position (all are $< 0.''6$) and (2) the Infrared Astronomical Satellite (IRAS; Neugebauer et al. 1984) faint source catalogue (Moshir et al.

Table 4.3 Infrared photometric data

Name	W1 (3.4 μm)	W2 (4.6 μm)	W3 (12 μm)	W4 (22 μm)	IRAS 12 μm	IRAS 25 μm	IRAS 60 μm	IRAS 100 μm
J0945+1737	1.9 ± 0.6	6.0 ± 1.8	53 ± 16	310 ± 90	<127	440 ± 70	890 ± 60	570 ± 130
J0958+1439 ^a	2.0 ± 0.6	3.8 ± 1.1	30 ± 9	130 ± 40	<250	<400	470 ± 140	<3000
J1000+1242	3.3 ± 1.0	7 ± 2	49 ± 15	220 ± 70	<118	<372	280 ± 70	<428
J1010+1413	1.8 ± 0.6	5.7 ± 1.7	56 ± 17	250 ± 70	<122	270 ± 50	470 ± 40	<625
J1010+0612	11 ± 3	17 ± 5	64 ± 19	290 ± 90	110 ± 30	290 ± 60	520 ± 50	590 ± 130
J1100+0846 ^b	15 ± 5	34 ± 10	180 ± 50	540 ± 160	–	–	–	–
J1125+1239	1.0 ± 0.3	1.4 ± 0.4	8 ± 2	29 ± 9	<250	<400	<300	<3000
J1130+1301 ^c	2.8 ± 0.8	3.6 ± 1.1	12 ± 4	45 ± 14	<114	<186	180 ± 50	<619
J1216+1417	5.9 ± 1.8	13 ± 4	42 ± 13	150 ± 50	<105	<400	<300	<620
J1316+1753	2.0 ± 0.6	3.2 ± 1.0	19 ± 6	90 ± 30	<250	<400	<300	<3000
J1338+1503	1.2 ± 0.4	2.5 ± 0.8	17 ± 5	80 ± 30	<134	<126	340 ± 50	<583
J1339+1425	0.5 ± 0.2	0.5 ± 0.1	1.1 ± 0.4	6 ± 2	<250	<400	<300	<3000
J1355+1300	7 ± 2	15 ± 4	40 ± 13	80 ± 20	<250	<400	<300	<3000
J1356+1026	2.2 ± 0.7	4.6 ± 1.4	27 ± 8	190 ± 60	<58	210 ± 50	800 ± 90	600 ± 150
J1430+1339	7 ± 2	11 ± 3	40 ± 12	180 ± 50	<105	190 ± 30	260 ± 40	<605
J1504+0151	2.0 ± 0.6	2.8 ± 0.8	10 ± 3	30 ± 9	<108	<93	210 ± 40	<508

Notes: The mid-infrared–far-infrared photometric flux densities, uncertainties and upper limits for the targets in our sample (in units of mJy) which are used in our SED analysis (these photometric data are shown in Fig. 4.3). These were obtained from WISE and IRAS all-sky catalogues (Moshir et al. 1992; Wright et al. 2010; see Sect. 4.3.3 for details). The first WISE band (W1) falls outside of the wavelength range of our templates, therefore these flux densities are not included in the SED fitting procedure.

^aThe IRAS fluxes for J0958+1439 are from SCANPI (<http://irsa.ipac.caltech.edu/applications/Scanpi>);

^bJ1100+0846 was not covered by IRAS observations;

^cJ1130+1301 did not have an entry in the IRAS faint source catalogue; however, inspection of the images indicates that it is detected and therefore we obtained the fluxes from the IRAS reject catalogue

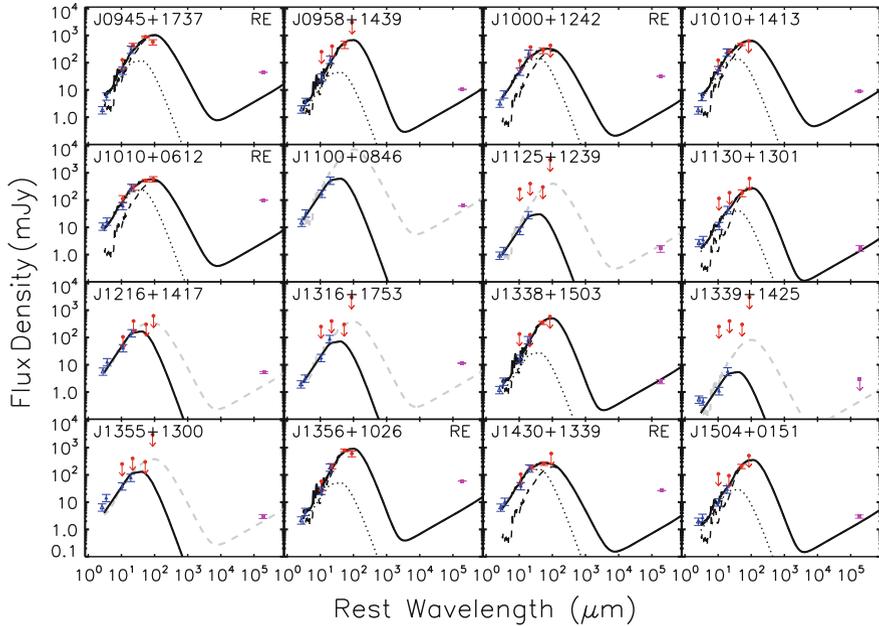


Fig. 4.3 The infrared SEDs for each target in our sample. The flux densities used in the fitting procedure are shown as filled triangles (WISE data) and filled circles (IRAS data; photometric data in Table 4.3). The first WISE band (at $3.4\ \mu\text{m}$) falls outside of the wavelength range of our templates and is shown with an empty symbol. Also shown are the overall best-fit SEDs: the total SEDs are shown as *solid curves*, the AGN templates are shown as *dotted curves* and the starburst templates as *dashed curves*. The *dashed curves* show the upper-limits on the starburst templates for the sources that lack far-infrared data. Using these SED fits we obtain SFRs and AGN luminosities (see Sect. 4.3.3 and Table 4.2). We also plot the 1.4 GHz flux densities (square symbols) that are not included in the fitting but do illustrate that five of the sources have significant excess radio emission above that expected from star formation (indicated with “RE” in the *top-right* of their panels; see Sect. 4.3.3; Table 4.2)

1992) with a matching radius of $\leq 30''$.¹ We added in quadrature 30% of the measured flux densities to the quoted WISE uncertainties to account for calibration uncertainties in the WISE data (Wright et al. 2010) and the discrete nature of the SED templates used in our analysis (see below; also see Del Moro et al. 2013). For the sources that we were not able to obtain IRAS flux density measurements (see Table 4.3) we estimated conservative maximum upper limits of 0.25, 0.4, 0.3 and 3 mJy for the 12, 25, 60, and $100\ \mu\text{m}$ bands respectively. One source (SDSS J1100+0846) falls into an area of the sky that was not observed by IRAS observations and we therefore cannot place photometric constraints on the IRAS bands for this source. The photometric data we used are shown in Fig. 4.3.

¹We verified these matches by following the log likelihood method of matching IRAS to WISE counterparts outlined in Wang et al. (2014).

To perform the SED fitting, calculate SFRs and AGN luminosities, we followed the procedure described in Sect. 2.2. The SEDs are shown in Fig. 4.3 and the derived values are tabulated in Table 4.2. The bolometric AGN luminosities for our targets span $L_{\text{AGN}} = (0.2 - 10) \times 10^{45} \text{ erg s}^{-1}$ (with a median $L_{\text{AGN}} = 2 \times 10^{45} \text{ erg s}^{-1}$) and therefore cover the classical “quasar” threshold of $L_{\text{AGN}} = 10^{45} \text{ erg s}^{-1}$. We note that these mid-infrared derived AGN luminosities are a factor of $\approx 1\text{--}20$ lower than those that would be predicted using the [O III] luminosity and the relationship of Heckman et al. (2004) (i.e., $L_{\text{AGN}} = 3500 L_{[\text{O III}]}$). However, this is consistent with other studies of luminous ($L_{[\text{O III}]} \gtrsim 10^{42} \text{ erg s}^{-1}$) type 2 AGN, at similar redshifts, that show that $L_{[\text{O III}]}$ is not linearly correlated with the nuclear luminosity and can over predict the AGN luminosity by an order of magnitude or more (Schirmer et al. 2013; Hainline et al. 2013).

Of the sixteen sources in our sample, eight have far-infrared luminosities that classify them as luminous infrared galaxies (LIRGs; $L_{\text{IR,SF}} = 10^{11}\text{--}10^{12} L_{\odot}$) and one as an ultraluminous infrared galaxy (ULIRG: $L_{\text{IR,SF}} > 10^{12} L_{\odot}$). Of the remaining seven sources, six of them have upper-limits on their far-infrared luminosities which are less than or consistent with the luminosity of LIRGs (see Table 4.2).² These infrared luminosities correspond to SFRs of $\lesssim [7\text{--}120] M_{\odot} \text{ yr}^{-1}$ and are typical for AGN of these luminosities at these redshifts (e.g., Zakamska et al. 2008; Mullaney et al. 2010; Rosario et al. 2012).

Finally, we investigate the origin of the radio emission from our targets. We plot the 1.4 GHz radio flux densities (given in Table 4.2) on the SEDs shown in Fig. 4.3. We identify if there is radio emission significantly above that expected from their ongoing star-formation (e.g., Helou et al. 1985; Condon et al. 1995), that may indicate radio emission due to an AGN either in form of a radio core or radio jets (e.g., see Del Moro et al. 2013 and references there-in) or due to shocks (e.g., Zakamska and Greene 2014). To do this, we use the definition given by Ivison et al. (2010) (see also Helou et al. 1985), calculating the ratio between the far-infrared and radio emission (q_{IR}) as

$$q_{\text{IR}} = \log \left[\frac{S_{\text{IR}}/3.75 \times 10^{12} \text{ W m}^{-2}}{S_{1.4}/\text{W m}^{-2} \text{ Hz}^{-1}} \right] \quad (4.3.1)$$

where S_{IR} is the rest-frame far-infrared (8–1000 μm) flux and $S_{1.4}$ is the rest-frame 1.4 GHz flux density assuming, $S_{\nu} \propto \nu^{-\alpha}$, with a radio spectral index of $\alpha = 0.7$. We give the value of q_{IR} for each source in our sample in Table 4.2. The quoted uncertainties combine the uncertainties on $S_{1.4}$, S_{IR} and a range in the unknown radio spectral indices (we use $\alpha = 0.2\text{--}1.5$). Star-forming galaxies have $q_{\text{IR}} \approx 2.4$ and we define “radio excess” sources as those with $q_{\text{IR}} \leq 1.8$, i.e., $\gtrsim 2.5\sigma$ away from the peak seen in the star-forming galaxies (Ivison et al. 2010; see also Del Moro et al. 2013 who use a similar definition). Using this definition we identify five of our targets as being radio excess and five sources that are classified as radio normal (see Table 4.2 and Fig. 4.3); however, we cannot rule out low-level radio emission above

²The remaining source, SDSS J1100+0846, which is not covered by IRAS and therefore has poor FIR constraints, has an upper limit consistent with a ULIRG.

that expected from star formation in these targets, as it can be difficult to identify using this method, especially in systems with high SFRs (e.g., Del Moro et al. 2013). The remaining six sources have upper limits on their S_{IR} values which results in upper limits on their q_{IR} values that are consistent with them being either radio normal or radio excess sources.

Based on FIRST and NVSS images, only one of our sources (J1430+1339) shows clear evidence for luminous extended radio structures on scales $>5''$ (see Table 4.2). Therefore, we follow the method of Kimball and Ivezić (2008) to search for evidence of extended radio structures (on $\approx 2\text{--}5''$ scales) that compares the peak and integrated 1.4 GHz FIRST flux densities (F_{peak} and F_{int} respectively). They define the parameter $\theta = (F_{\text{int}}/F_{\text{peak}})^{0.5}$ and any source with $\theta > 1.06$ is classed as spatially resolved. We provide θ for all of our targets with FIRST detections in Table 4.2. For the five sources with $\theta > 1.06$, i.e., those that pass the criteria to be “resolved”, we also provide the position angle and radius of the de-convolved major axis provided by FIRST. Of these five sources, two have very low 1.4 GHz flux densities and therefore the uncertainty on θ is high. The other three have stronger evidence for being spatially resolved and are also “radio excess” sources; therefore, they are the strongest candidates for having radio jets on $\approx 3\text{--}8''$ scales (i.e., $\approx 7\text{--}12$ kpc; Table 4.2), although shocks due to outflows are another possible explanation for this excess radio emission (Zakamska and Greene 2014). High-resolution radio imaging will be instrumental in determining the origin and morphology of the radio emission in the whole sample.

4.4 Velocity Definitions and Spatially Resolved Kinematics

4.4.1 Non-parametric Velocity Definitions

We are interested in the spatially-resolved kinematics of the $[\text{O III}]\lambda\lambda 4959, 5007$ and $\text{H}\beta$ emission lines for the sixteen type 2 AGN we observed with the Gemini-GMOS IFU. The combination of these emission-line species allows us to measure emission-line region sizes (Sect. 4.5.1), spatially resolve the ionised gas kinematics (Sect. 4.5.2) and calculate ionised gas masses (Sect. 4.5.3) for our targets. The emission-line profiles in type 2 AGN are often found to be complex, consisting of multiple narrow and broad components (e.g., Veilleux 1991; Greene et al. 2011; Villar-Martín et al. 2011b), which is also the case for our sample. Due the complexity of the emission-line profiles we opted to use non-parametric definitions to characterise their widths and velocities within each pixel of the IFU data. We used an approach that: (1) is consistent for all of the targets in the sample; (2) allows us to de-couple galaxy dynamics, merger remnants and outflow features; and (3) provides results that are directly comparable to observations in the literature. The definitions that we have used throughout, for describing both the galaxy-integrated emission-line profiles and the spatially-resolved kinematics, are described below and are illustrated in Fig. 4.4:

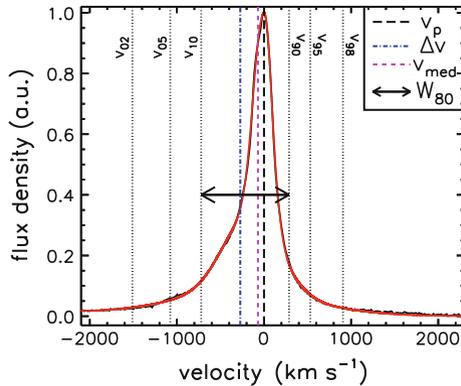


Fig. 4.4 Illustration of the different non-parametric velocity definitions used in this work which are described in Sect. 4.4.1. We show an example [O III] λ 5007 emission-line profile from our sample (solid curve). The vertical dotted lines show different percentiles to the flux contained in the overall emission-line profile (from left to right: 2nd; 5th; 10th; 90th; 95th and 98th). The long-dashed line shows the velocity of the peak flux density (v_p). The vertical short-dashed line shows the median velocity (v_{med}) and the dot-dashed line shows the velocity offset of the underlying broad wings (Δv ; see Sect. 4.4.1). The arrow indicates the line width that contains 80% of the flux (W_{80})

- The peak velocity (v_p) is the velocity of the peak flux density in the overall [O III] λ 5007 emission-line profile. For our targets, this traces the brightest narrow emission-line component (i.e., those with FWHM $\lesssim 500$ km s $^{-1}$).
- The line width, W_{80} , is the velocity width of the line that contains 80% of the emission-line flux such that $W_{80} = v_{90} - v_{10}$, where v_{10} and v_{90} are the velocities at the 10th and 90th percentiles, respectively (Fig. 4.4). For a single Gaussian profile this is approximately the FWHM.
- To measure the velocity offset of the broad underlying wings we define the velocity offset, Δv , that is measured as $\Delta v = (v_{05} + v_{95})/2$, where v_{05} and v_{95} are the velocities at the 5th and 95th percentiles of the overall emission-line profiles respectively (Fig. 4.4). For a profile that is well characterised by a single narrow Gaussian component and a luminous broad Gaussian component, Δv is the velocity offset of the broad component. For a single Gaussian component $\Delta v = 0$.
- To enable us to compare to previous work, we also measured v_{02} and v_{98} , which are the 2nd and 98th percentiles of the flux contained in the overall emission-line profiles (as used in Rupke and Veilleux 2013)³ and can be considered the “maximum” projected velocity of the gas.

³We note that Rupke and Veilleux (2013) fit a broad and narrow component to the emission lines and then define v_{98} for the broad component only. As a result their values are likely to be higher than our values that we defined from the overall emission-line profile so as not to make any assumptions on the kinematic structure of the emission lines (i.e., the number of distinct velocity components).

- Finally, we measured the median velocity (v_{med} ; Fig. 4.4) of the overall emission-line profile so that we can compare to the type 2 AGN observed in Liu et al. (2013b). We find that v_{med} is likely to be dominated by galaxy kinematics in many cases (i.e., galaxy rotation or mergers; see Sect. 4.5.2.2) and should be used with care if interpreting outflow kinematics.

We emphasise that these definitions are used to enable us to consistently compare all of the targets in our sample as well as compare to observations in the literature; however, for a few individual cases some care should be taken when interpreting these measurements due to the uniqueness and complexity of the emission-line profiles. Further details are provided in the Appendix of Harrison et al. (2014).

4.4.2 Emission-Line Profile Fitting Procedure

As several of the velocity definitions outlined above and illustrated in Fig. 4.4 are measured from the broad wings of the emission-line profiles they are subject to the influence of noise in the spectra, especially in the lower surface brightness regions of our IFU observations. To circumvent this issue, we characterise each emission-line profile using a combination of multiple Gaussian components. We note that we do not draw any physical meaning from the individual Gaussian components, they are only used to characterise the emission-line profiles. Below, we describe the emission-line profile fitting procedure that we use throughout for fitting the galaxy-integrated spectra and also the spectra used to produce the spatially resolved maps and velocity profiles described in Sect. 4.4.3.

Initially, we isolated the [O III] $\lambda\lambda$ 4959,5007 emission-line doublet from the underlying continuum by linearly interpolating each spectrum between line-free regions close to the emission lines, a commonly used method for type 2 AGN (e.g., Husemann et al. 2013; Liu et al. 2013b). The emission-line doublet was then fit with a minimising- χ^2 method, using the IDL routine MPFIT (Markwardt 2009) with Gaussian components. For every Gaussian component we simultaneously fit the [O III] λ 5007 and [O III] λ 4959 emission lines using the same line width, a fixed wavelength separation and the intensity ratio was fixed at [O III] λ 4959/[O III] λ 5007 = 0.33 (e.g., Dimitrijević et al. 2007). Initially we fit a single Gaussian component to the emission-line profile and consequently additional Gaussian components were added to the overall fit (up to a maximum of six components) until the important values for our study (i.e., Δv , W_{80} and v_p ; see Fig. 4.4) became stable within $\leq 20\%$, i.e., the addition or removal of a Gaussian component does not change these values significantly. We only fitted more than one Gaussian component if the emission line was detected above a S/N threshold of ≈ 30 , with this threshold being motivated by visually inspecting the fits and the reduced χ^2 values (see below). For spectra below this S/N threshold, W_{80} cannot be well characterised and we are also unable to define Δv . We included appropriate constraints to the line widths to avoid fitting excessively broad components to the continuum or narrow components to

noise spikes (i.e., limited by the spectral resolution). We verified that our fitting procedure was effective across the whole field-of-view by visually inspecting the spectra and their best-fitting solutions extracted from 25 spatial regions for each object individually (e.g., Fig. 4.5). An additional verification of the success of our fitting procedure was that, in all but one of the targets,⁴ the median reduced χ^2 values of the fits to the individual pixels in the data cubes are between 1.0–1.8 with $\geq 60\%$ of the pixels having reduced χ^2 values between 0.8–2.5.

Using the overall fits to the emission-line profiles, we measure the non-parametric velocity definitions defined in Sect. 4.4.1 (see Fig. 4.4). Random errors on these quantities were calculated by taking the 1σ spread of values calculated from a 1000 random spectra that were generated using the final models plus Gaussian random noise (based on the standard deviation of the continuum). To obtain the final quoted uncertainties, we added these random errors in quadrature with an estimated systematic error that we calculated from the range in the velocity values derived from adding or removing a Gaussian component to the final emission-line models. We note that these uncertainties are extremely small ($\lesssim 10\%$) in the high signal-to-noise ratio spectra and therefore the uncertainties will be dominated by the physical interpretation of these values (see Sect. 4.5).

To enable us to measure ionised gas masses (Sect. 4.5.3) we also measured the $H\beta$ emission-line profiles and fluxes from our IFU data. To do this, we extract the $H\beta$ emission-line profiles from the IFU data cubes in the same manner to that for [O III]. We find that the overall shapes of the $H\beta$ emission-line profiles are in excellent agreement with the [O III] emission-line profiles for all but three of our sources (the exceptions are SDSS J1216+1417; SDSS J1338+1503; and SDSS 1504+0151). This indicates that for the majority of the sources, the $H\beta$ emission lines are not significantly affected by stellar absorption features (which is true for many AGN with luminous emission lines; Soto and Martin 2010; Harrison et al. 2012; Liu et al. 2013b) and this emission line traces the same kinematic components as the [O III] emission line (see also Rodríguez Zaurín et al. 2013). For these thirteen sources we measure the $H\beta$ emission-line fluxes by fitting the [O III] emission-line models (described above) to the data at the observed wavelength of the $H\beta$ emission lines, allowing only the overall normalisation to vary. The remaining three sources, which have different profiles for these two emission-line species, may have varying ionisation states for different kinematic components and/or have higher levels of $H\beta$ stellar absorption features that is certainly plausible given the stellar continua and absorption features observed in their optical spectra. For this work, we wish to avoid using a variety of approaches for our targets; therefore, we choose to not use the $H\beta$ emission lines in the analyses of these three sources.

Due to the lack of clearly defined stellar absorption lines in the spectra across our targets, we define the systemic redshift from the velocity of the peak flux density in the [O III] λ 5007 emission line (see Fig. 4.5). This choice of systemic redshift effectively traces the mean velocity of the narrow components in the emission-line

⁴The source with a higher median reduced $\chi^2 = 3.5$ is SDSS J1356+1026 that we attribute to the highly complex emission-line profile and exceptionally low noise.

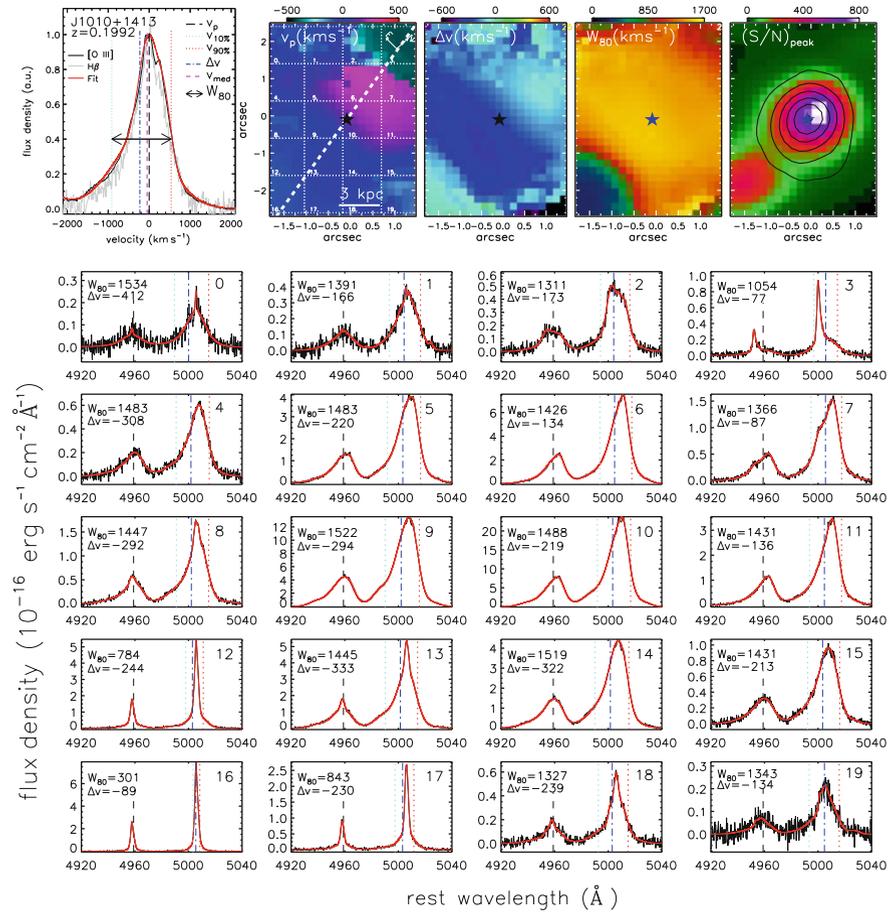


Fig. 4.5 Our IFU data for an example object in our sample (SDSS J1010+1413). The equivalent plots for the rest of the sample can be found in Harrison et al. (2014). Upper panels from *left to right*: *Panel 1* Galaxy-integrated [O III] λ 5007 emission-line profile (black curve) extracted from the full field-of-view of the IFU. Zero velocity corresponds to the redshift given in Table 4.2 and the spectrum has been normalised to the peak flux density. The solid red curves indicate the best fit to the emission-line profile. The vertical dashed and dotted lines correspond to the non-parametric velocity definitions described in Fig. 4.4 and Sect. 4.4.1. The H β emission-line profile is shown in grey; *Panel 2* The velocity of the [O III] emission-line peak (v_p) at each pixel. The solid bars indicate 3 kpc in spatial extent and the dashed line indicates the kinematic “major axis” as defined in Sect. 4.4.3. The dotted lines and numbers indicate the spatial regions from which we extracted the spectra shown in the lower panels; *Panel 3* The value of the velocity offset of the broad emission-line wings (Δv) at each pixel; *Panel 4* The value of the emission-line width (W_{80}) at each pixel. *Panel 5* Signal-to-noise ratio of the peak flux density of the [O III] emission-line profile at each pixel. The contours show the morphology of line-free continuum emission (collapsed around a $\approx 200 \text{ \AA}$ wavelength region centred on [O III] λ 5007) indicated by lines of constant signal-to-noise ratio, starting at 15σ with increments of 10σ . The stars in each panel show the position of the peak of this continuum emission. *Lower panels* Continuum-subtracted spectra extracted from the individual spatial regions indicated in Panel 2

profiles, which are often attributed to galaxy kinematics (e.g., Greene and Ho 2005; Harrison et al. 2012; Rupke and Veilleux 2013; also see Sect. 4.5.2.1); however, this might not always be the case and therefore places an uncertainty on our systemic redshift. For SDSS J0958+1439 and SDSS J1316+1753 where the overall emission line profiles lack a clear single peak we take the flux weighted mean velocity of the narrow components (i.e., those with $\text{FWHM} < 500 \text{ km s}^{-1}$) used in the fit to the galaxy-integrated spectrum (i.e., similar to the procedure used in Rodríguez Zaurín et al. 2013). Across the whole sample, the mean velocity offset between our systemic redshift and the SDSS redshift is -18 km s^{-1} with a scatter of 54 km s^{-1} . We note that any velocity *differences* that are measured (such as W_{80}) are unaffected by the choice in systemic redshift.

4.4.3 Velocity Maps and Velocity-Distance Profiles

We significantly detect [O III] emission to the edges of the IFU field-of-view in all sixteen sources (i.e., over $\geq 10\text{--}20 \text{ kpc}$; see discussion in Sect. 4.5.1). These extended emission-line regions enable us to trace the ionised gas kinematics over these scales. In Fig. 4.5 we show example velocity maps of v_p , W_{80} and Δv (for the target J1010+1413) that were created by measuring these quantities across the field-of-view following the procedure outlined in Sect. 4.4.2. The spectra used to calculate these values are from averaging over 3×3 pixels (i.e., $\approx 0.''6$; comparable to the seeing of the observations) at the position of every pixel. At each position we measured the velocities from the fits to the [O III] emission-line profiles but only if it was detected in the spectra with a signal-to-noise ratio ≥ 7 . In Fig. 4.5 we also show the peak signal-to-noise ratio $[(S/N)_{\text{peak}}]$ map which is the ratio of the peak flux density of the fitted [O III] emission-line profile to the noise in the spectrum at each pixel position. These maps are discussed in Sect. 4.5 and the full versions for all targets can be found in Harrison et al. (2014).

To further aid our analyses we also produced velocity profiles along two axes through the IFU data cubes for each source. We firstly defined a “major axis” for each source based upon the velocity peak maps (v_p ; e.g., Fig. 4.5; the full versions for all targets can be found in Harrison et al. (2014)). The positional angle (PA) of the “major axis” for each source was chosen such that the velocity shear of the v_p map was the maximum. For a source where v_p traces galactic rotation this “major axis” corresponds to the kinematic major axis of the galaxy (for a discussion see Sect. 4.5.2.1). The second axis was taken perpendicular to the “major axis” (see e.g., Fig. 4.6). Using the PAs defined above we produced pseudo-long-slit spectra with a slit-width of five pixels ($\approx 0.8''\text{--}1''$). We obtained the spectra along each slit (from averaging over a length of 3 pixels) and calculated the velocity measurements outlined in Sect. 4.4.1. In these velocity profiles we also plot the ratio of the [O III] to $\text{H}\beta$ emission line fluxes, plotting the 3σ lower-limit on this ratio when $\text{H}\beta$ is not detected above 3σ .

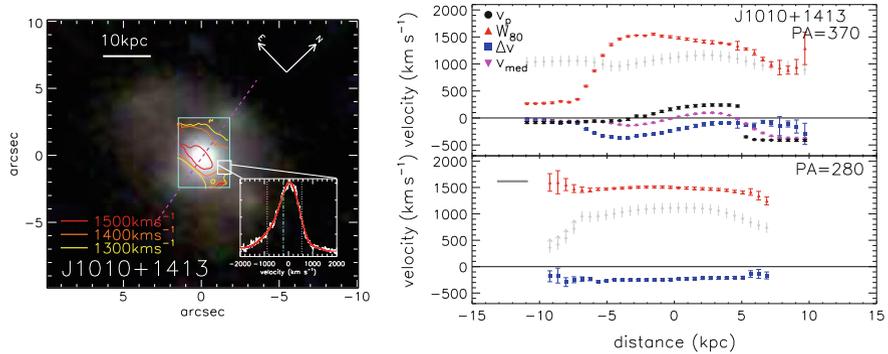


Fig. 4.6 Our IFU data and SDSS image from an example object (J1010+1413) in our sample. The equivalent plots for the rest of the sample can be found in Harrison et al. (2014). *Left* Three colour (g, r, i) SDSS image. The *cyan* box shows the field-of-view of our GMOS-IFU observations. The contours show values of W_{80} and highlights the spatial distribution where the [O III] emission-line profiles are broadest (see Fig. 4.5). The *dashed* line shows the kinematic “major axis” defined in Sect. 4.4.3. We also show an example [O III] emission-line profile extracted from the highlighted spatial region (*white* box; for curve and line definitions see Fig. 4.5). *Right upper* [O III] velocity profiles (using the velocity definitions described in Sect. 4.4.1) along the kinematic “major axis” indicated in the *left* panel. The grey diamonds indicate the flux ratio: $1000 \times \log ([\text{O III}]/\text{H}\beta)$. *Right lower* Velocity profiles taken perpendicular to the kinematic “major axis” indicated in the *left* panel. The solid horizontal bar indicates the typical seeing of the observations (i.e., $0.''7$). For this source very broad emission-line profiles ($W_{80} \gtrsim 800 \text{ km s}^{-1}$) with a velocity offset of $\Delta v = -300 \text{ km s}^{-1}$ are found over the full extent of the field-of-view ($\approx 16 \text{ kpc}$). Extended broad emission is found in all of the objects in our sample but with a variety of morphologies

4.5 Results

Using Gemini-GMOS IFU data we study the spatially resolved properties of the [O III] $\lambda\lambda 4959, 5007$ and $\text{H}\beta$ emission lines of sixteen luminous type 2 AGN (Table 4.2) chosen from our well constrained parent sample (described in Sect. 4.3.1; see Figs. 4.1 and 4.2). In Fig. 4.5 we show an example of the spatially-integrated [O III] and $\text{H}\beta$ emission-line profiles, the velocity maps and the peak [O III] signal-to-noise ratio maps for all of the sources in our sample. In Fig. 4.6 we show an example of the SDSS image and velocity-distance profiles. The equivalent figures for all targets can be found in the appendix of Harrison et al. (2014). In Table 4.4 we tabulate the values that we derive from the galaxy-integrated spectra, the emission-line images and the velocity maps. In the following sub-sections we present our results for the sample as a whole, firstly presenting the sizes and morphologies of the emission-line regions (Sect. 4.5.1) before presenting the spatially resolved kinematics (Sect. 4.5.2). Very detailed notes on the results from our IFU data for the individual sources can be found in the Appendix of Harrison et al. (2014).

Table 4.4 Kinematic measurements and emission-line region sizes

Name	$\langle W_{80} \rangle$ (km s ⁻¹)	$W_{80,\max}$ (km s ⁻¹)	$\langle \Delta v \rangle$ (km s ⁻¹)	$ \Delta v_{\max} $ (km s ⁻¹)	$\langle v_{02} \rangle$ (km s ⁻¹)	$\Delta v_{\text{med,max}}$ (km s ⁻¹)	Gal. Kinematics	$R_{[O\ III]}$ (kpc)	D_{600} (kpc)
(1)	(2)	(3)	(4)	(5)	(6)	(7)	(8)	(9)	(10)
J0945+1737	1009	1284	-273	284	-1511	138	I	2.7 ± 1.6	≥12
J0958+1439	815	904	-46	107	-866	190	R	2.6 ± 1.4	≥10
J1000+1242	795	873	-58	171	-761	311	R/I	4.3 ± 1.8	14
J1010+1413	1449	1525	-229	350	-1523	299	R/I	3.9 ± 2.3	≥16
J1010+0612	1280	1468	-95	216	-1267	138	R	1.6 ± 1.3	≥6
J1100+0846	1066	1367	-30	148	-1192	55	R	1.9 ± 1.3	≥10
J1125+1239	1285	1574	-265	424	-1547	73	F	2.9 ± 2.0	≥9
J1130+1301	778	849	149	173	-616	140	R	2.8 ± 1.7	8
J1216+1417	1228	1456	124	230	-1115	40	F	1.5 ± 1.1	≥6
J1316+1753	1127	1169	-191	326	-1216	500	R/I	3.1 ± 1.8	≥14
J1338+1503	890	1085	124	182	-813	145	R/I	3.5 ± 2.2	≥13
J1339+1425	672	724	147	178	-505	84	R	2.5 ± 1.7	6
J1355+1300	667	953	-184	277	-797	71	R	3.5 ± 1.8	≥6
J1356+1026	900	964	-215	544	-1049	523	I	3.1 ± 1.5	≥11
J1430+1339	822	1042	-152	268	-999	439	R/I	1.8 ± 1.1	≥9
J1504+0151	1184	1181	-495	520	-1739	149	R	2.9 ± 2.1	≥7

Notes. Velocity values and sizes derived from the galaxy-integrated spectra and velocity maps shown (see Sect. 4.4.1 and Fig. 4.4 for velocity definitions). (1) Object name; (2) value of the [O III] emission-line width, W_{80} , derived from the galaxy-integrated spectra; (3) maximum value of W_{80} from the spatially resolved maps (with a 95% clipping threshold to remove spurious pixels); (4) velocity offset, Δv , derived from the galaxy-integrated spectrum; (5) absolute value of the maximum Δv in the spatially resolved maps (with 95% clipping); (6) the value of maximum [O III] velocity, v_{02} , derived from the integrated spectrum; (7) the maximum velocity shear of the median velocity, v_{med} , from the velocity maps (with 95% clipping); (8) qualitative description of the peak velocity maps: R = rotation-like velocity field; R/I = rotation-like velocity gradient but irregular velocity field; I = irregular velocity field; F = no velocity gradients (see Sect. 4.5.2.1); (9) observed semi-major axis of the [O III] emission-line region from fitting an ellipse with uncertainties that are the typical seeing (i.e., 0.''7); (10) total projected extent of observed broad emission-line profiles (i.e., with $W_{80} > 600$ km s⁻¹) with conservative uncertainties of 2× the seeing. Measurement uncertainties on the galaxy-integrated velocities are typically < 10% and therefore the dominant source of uncertainty is the physical interpretation of these values (see Sect. 4.5.2)

4.5.1 *Extended Emission-Line Regions: Sizes and Morphologies*

Although the ionised gas kinematics are the focus of this study, it is useful to make some initial comments on the emission-line region sizes and morphologies to compare to previous studies and to aid our later discussion. We detect [O III] emission over physical spatial extents of $\geq 10\text{--}20$ kpc (i.e., in some cases the [O III] emission is extended beyond the IFU field-of-view). This is consistent with other studies that have shown that luminous AGN can have emission-line regions up to tens of kiloparsecs in size (e.g., Bennert et al. 2002; Humphrey et al. 2010; Greene et al. 2011; Schirmer et al. 2013; Harrison et al. 2012; Husemann et al. 2013; Liu et al. 2013a; Hainline et al. 2013). In Fig. 4.7 we show the peak [O III] signal-to-noise maps, for the whole sample, overlaid with contours showing the continuum-free [O III] $\lambda 5007$ images (i.e., wavelength collapsed images around the emission line). We fit single ellipses to the [O III] emission-line images to calculate the semi-major axis ($R_{[\text{O III}]}$; Table 4.4). The range of sizes we get from this method are $R_{[\text{O III}]} = 1.5\text{--}4.3$ kpc, similar to, but generally higher than, the ULIRG-AGN composites observed in Rodríguez Zaurín et al. (2013). We note that if we subtract the typical seeing of the observations (see Table 4.4), in quadrature, from these size measurements they are reduced by $\approx 20\%$ with a *worst-case* scenario of $\approx 50\%$ if the seeing reached $0.''9$.⁵ Based on a comparison to high-resolution imaging Rodríguez Zaurín et al. (2013) suggest that $R_{[\text{O III}]}$ is an over-estimate of the emission-line region size for their sample; however, using the kinematics of our IFU data we commonly find spatially resolved emission over much larger extents (see Sect. 4.5.2 and Table 4.4) and therefore find that $R_{[\text{O III}]}$ is probably an underestimate of the size of the emission-line regions in our sources. Although we do not use identical methods, our observed sizes are comparable to, but towards the lower end of, those seen in the more luminous type 2 quasars in Liu et al. (2013a) as is expected by the [O III] size-luminosity relationship (e.g., Bennert et al. 2002; Hainline et al. 2013).

In agreement with previous studies of radio-quiet AGN (e.g., Husemann et al. 2013; Liu et al. 2013a, 2014) we find that the emission-line regions in our sample are predominantly round or moderately elliptical (Fig. 4.7). However, we find tentative evidence that radio excess sources (i.e., those with the strongest evidence of radio emission above that expected from star formation) have a higher incidence of extended and irregular morphologies. It has previously been shown that radio-loud quasars have a higher incidence of irregular morphologies than their radio-quiet counterparts (Liu et al. 2013a and references there-in). Although the radio data presented here are of insufficient spatial resolution to establish a direct (or lack there-of) connection, our results may imply that the presence of radio-AGN activity, even at modest luminosities, is connected to the morphologies of their emission-line regions (see also Husemann et al. 2013). Alternatively, the “radio excess” in these sources

⁵The one source that has a $R_{[\text{O III}]}$ value smaller than $0.''9$ (i.e., our most pessimistic value of the seeing across the whole sample) was taken under good conditions of $\approx 0.''6$ and is therefore spatially resolved.

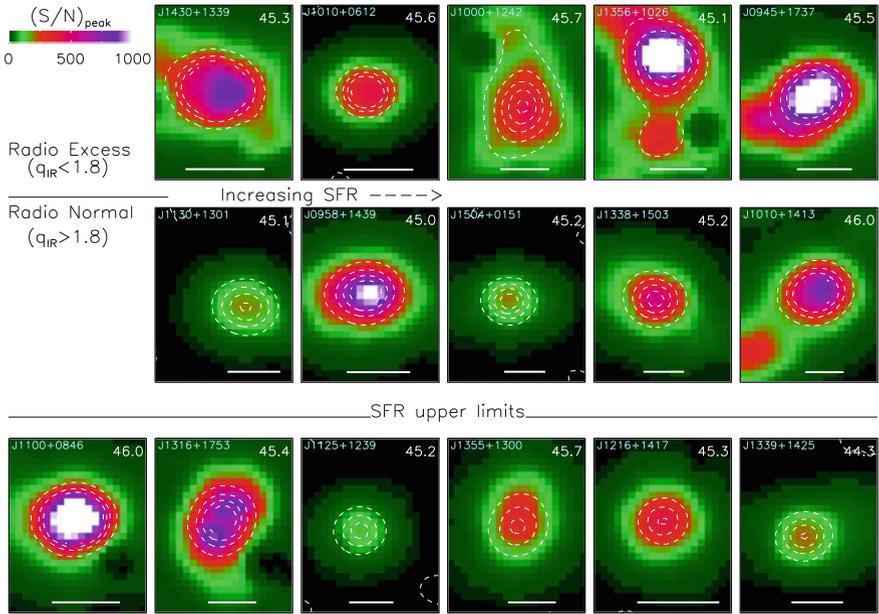


Fig. 4.7 The [O III] peak signal-to-noise ratio maps (see Sect. 4.4.3) for all sixteen type 2 AGN in our sample. We have split the maps for the targets by radio excess (*top row*), radio normal (*middle row*) and those with only upper limits on their SFRs, for which we cannot determine their radio excess parameter (*bottom row*; see Table 4.2). The *top two rows* are arranged by SFR from the lowest (*left*) to the highest (*right*). The *dashed* contours show the morphology of the wavelength collapsed [O III] $\lambda 5007$ images. The horizontal bars represent 3 kpc in extent. The numbers in the *top-right* of each map is the AGN luminosity for that source ($\log[L_{\text{AGN}}; \text{erg s}^{-1}]$; Table 4.2). The [O III] images are predominantly round or moderately elliptical and there is tentative evidence that the radio excess sources show a higher incidence of irregular morphologies

could be due to shocks that could also be responsible for the irregular emission line regions that we observe in Fig. 4.7 (see Zakamska and Greene 2014). Multi-frequency high-resolution radio imaging is required to determine the origin and morphology of the radio emission in these objects.

4.5.2 Spatially-Resolved Ionised Gas Kinematics

Multiple kinematic components (i.e., multiple narrow and broad components) are seen in the galaxy-integrated emission-line profiles of the sources in our sample. There are several possible origins for these kinematic components such as merging nuclei, merger remnants or merger debris, halo gas, rotating gas discs and outflowing or inflowing gas. Indeed, previous spatially-resolved spectroscopy of type 2 AGN has shown that multiple kinematic processes are likely to contribute to the overall

emission-line profiles of ionised gas (e.g., Holt et al. 2008; Fischer et al. 2011; Villar-Martín et al. 2011a,b; Rupke and Veilleux 2013). By studying the spatially resolved velocity maps, velocity profiles and peak signal-to-noise maps from our IFU data (e.g., Figs. 4.5 and 4.6) we can distinguish between these scenarios and characterise individual kinematic components. Although the focus of our study is to identify and characterise galaxy-wide ionised outflows, in order to isolate the kinematics due to outflows we must also investigate these other kinematic features. In Sect. 4.5.2 we give a qualitative description of the observed kinematics due to galaxy rotation and merger features, including candidate dual AGN (summarised in Table 4.4), and in Sect. 4.5.2 we describe the outflow kinematics. We note here that most of the analysis is described on the basis of inspecting our velocity maps and velocity-distance profiles; however, we checked that these maps are a reasonable representation of the data by inspecting the spectra extracted from several regions across the IFUs.

4.5.2.1 Ionised Gas Kinematics: Galaxy Rotation, Mergers and Dual AGN

Rotating gas discs will produce regular velocity fields, with a gradient of blue to red and relatively narrow emission-line profiles (i.e., $W_{80} < 600 \text{ km s}^{-1}$). As discussed in Sect. 4.4.1 the emission-line peak velocity (v_p ; see Fig. 4.4) predominantly traces the luminous narrow emission-line components in our data. We find regular v_p velocity fields and velocity profiles, indicative of tracing galaxy rotation (e.g., Courteau 1997), for seven of the sixteen objects in the sample. We give these a classification of “R” in Table 4.4. This interpretation of rotating discs is often supported by the kinematic “major axis” (defined in Sect. 4.4.3) being aligned with the morphological major axis in the disc-like galaxies revealed in the SDSS images and/or the optical continuum seen in our IFU data. Indeed, it has previously been observed that the narrow-components (or “cores”; i.e., with the broad-wings removed) of ionised emission-line profiles, can be good tracers of stellar dynamics (i.e., traces galactic rotation and/or stellar velocity dispersion) or molecular gas disks (e.g., Greene and Ho 2005; Barth et al. 2008; Barbosa et al. 2009; Rupke and Veilleux 2013; but see Zakamska and Greene 2014). Further confirmation that the v_p velocity fields are tracing rotation would require detailed kinematic analysis (e.g., Courteau 1997; Krajnović et al. 2006) that is beyond the scope of this chapter. In a further five sources we see a velocity gradient from blue to red in the v_p velocity maps and profiles; however, the velocity fields are more irregular and therefore they may not be dominated by galaxy rotation but instead may trace kinematics due to other processes such as merging components or outflows (given a classification “R/I” in Table 4.4).

We next consider kinematics due to mergers. Mergers are known to create extended emission-line regions due to companion galaxies or merger debris and have previously been observed in spatially resolved spectroscopy of AGN (e.g., Villar-Martín et al. 2011a,b; Harrison et al. 2012). Furthermore, they may be expected to be common in our sample as $\gtrsim 60\%$ of type 2 AGN at moderate redshifts $z \approx 0.3\text{--}0.4$ show

signs of morphological disturbance at some level in *HST* imaging (Villar-Martín et al. 2012).⁶ The [O III] emission-line peak signal-to-noise ratio maps (Fig. 4.7) allows us to search for faint spatially-distinct emission-line regions which could indicate companion/merging galaxies, merger debris, tidal features or halo gas. Based on these maps, five sources show spatially distinct emission-line regions with distinct velocities to the rest of the host galaxy. One of these has clear signs of major-merger activity based on the SDSS image and our IFU data (J1356+1026), three are likely to be distinct emission-line regions (i.e., merger debris or halo gas; J0945+1737; J1010+1413 and J1000+1242) and one could have several interpretations including a dual AGN, an outflow or merger (J1316+1753).

Major mergers of galaxies naturally lead to the possibility of “dual” AGN; i.e., two nuclei which are gravitationally bound and are both actively accreting material. Systematic spectroscopic searches for AGN with luminous double peaked [O III] emission-line profiles has become a popular method to identify candidate dual AGN (e.g., Wang et al. 2009; Smith et al. 2010; Liu et al. 2010; Ge et al. 2012; Comerford et al. 2013). However, these double peaks could also be due to other processes such as rotating gas disks, merging components or outflows, all illuminated by a single AGN (e.g., Fu et al. 2011, 2012; see Comerford et al. 2012 for a discussion). Two of our sources show luminous double peaks (J1316+1753 and J1356+1026) in their galaxy-integrated [O III] emission-line profiles. Based on our data, the strongest case for a dual AGN is J1356+1026 (see also Greene et al. 2012), where we observe two distinct emission-line and continuum regions.

4.5.2.2 Ionised Gas Kinematics: Galaxy-Wide Outflows

In the IFU data of all sixteen targets we find broad [O III] $\lambda\lambda$ 4959,5007 emission-line profiles across the field-of-view (i.e., $W_{80,\max} \approx 720\text{--}1600\text{ km s}^{-1}$; Table 4.4) with a range of maximum projected velocity offsets ($|\Delta v_{\max}| = 110\text{--}540\text{ km s}^{-1}$; Table 4.4). Such broad (i.e., $W_{80} \gtrsim 600\text{ km s}^{-1}$) and asymmetric [O III] emission-line profiles, are difficult to explain with mergers or galaxy rotation, even for the most massive galaxies, and are attributed to high-velocity outflowing gas (e.g., Heckman et al. 1981; Veilleux et al. 1995; Greene and Ho 2005; Barth et al. 2008; Nesvadba et al. 2008; Greene et al. 2011; Westmoquette et al. 2012; Harrison et al. 2012; Liu et al. 2013b; Rupke and Veilleux 2013). As with all of these studies we favour outflow over inflow due to the exceptionally high velocities and line-widths that we observe. In the previous sub-section we isolated kinematic components due to other features (e.g., mergers and galaxy rotation) and we find that these have little effect on the observed kinematic structure of the line-width, W_{80} and also in most cases that of the velocity offset, Δv (the exceptions are J1356+1026 and J1316+1753 for which Δv is affected due to the dual bright narrow lines); i.e., these maps are dominated by

⁶We note that Villar-Martín et al. 2012 refer to low-level morphological disturbances of several types based on the classifications of Ramos Almeida et al. 2011. The number of *major mergers* observed in AGN is much lower (e.g., Cisternas et al. 2011).

outflow kinematics. We therefore use these maps to describe the outflow kinematic structures and morphologies. We note that Liu et al. (2013b) use the velocity structure of the median velocity (v_{med} ; Fig. 4.4), in which they predominantly see a blue to red velocity gradient, as part of their outflow analysis of their IFU data of $z = 0.3\text{--}0.6$ radio-quiet luminous type 2 AGN. We observe a very similar range in maximum line-widths and v_{med} maximum velocity gradients (i.e., $\Delta v_{\text{med,max}} \approx 55\text{--}520 \text{ km s}^{-1}$; Table 4.4) to the objects in Liu et al. (2013b). However, by spatially resolving v_{med} we find that this quantity is predominantly dominated by the kinematics of the v_p velocity field and consequently v_{med} can often be dominated by kinematics due to galaxy rotation and mergers (see Sect. 4.5.2.1). Therefore, we favour Δv over v_{med} to describe the projected outflow velocity offset for the rest of our analysis.

For an outflow consisting of ionised clouds (observable in [O III] emission) embedded in a bulk outflow (e.g., Heckman et al. 1990; Crenshaw and Kraemer 2000) the projected velocity offsets will be sensitive to inclination effects while the emission-line widths (i.e., W_{80}) are more likely to reflect typical bulk motions and be less sensitive to inclination (also see discussion in Harrison et al. 2012). We therefore concentrate on the W_{80} maps to investigate the sizes and morphologies of the outflows (Fig. 4.8), comparing them with the Δv maps when appropriate. The *observed* outflow velocities and morphologies will also depend on other factors. For example, an outflow with the far side obscured by dust can explain the excess of blue wings in [O III] emission-line profiles (e.g., Heckman et al. 1981; Vrtilik 1985; Veilleux 1991), while outflowing redshifted components can be explained if the outflow is highly inclined and/or is extended beyond the likely obscuring material (e.g., Barth et al. 2008; Crenshaw et al. 2010; Greene et al. 2012; Rupke and Veilleux 2013). We observe both red and blue velocity offsets in our sample (Table 4.4). A range of structures of outflows have been observed in galaxies both with and without powerful AGN, including spherically-symmetric outflows and bi-polar superbubbles (e.g., Veilleux et al. 1994; Greene et al. 2012; Liu et al. 2013b; Rupke and Veilleux 2013). Detailed modelling of the outflow kinematics of individual objects is beyond the scope of this chapter; however, we briefly describe the morphology and kinematics of the outflows that we observe in our sample below.

We define the quantity D_{600} (values in Table 4.4) which is the maximum projected spatial extent of the broad [O III] emission-line profiles (with $W_{80} > 600 \text{ km s}^{-1}$; i.e., where the kinematics are likely to be dominated by outflows) based upon the velocity profiles. The outflow features are located over large extents in all sources ($D_{600} \gtrsim [6\text{--}16] \text{ kpc}$; Table 4.4) with the spatial extents being mostly lower limits due to the limited field-of-view of our observations. We note that in most cases the broad [O III] emission is clearly spatially extended, due to the morphological or kinematic structure that we observe (see below) and in all cases it is extended beyond the seeing; however, a conservative uncertainty on these D_{600} measurements would be $\approx 2 \times$ seeing (see Table 4.4). Although our sample was initially selected to have luminous and broad [O III] emission-line components (see Sect. 4.3.1), these results demonstrate that when these components are seen in the one-dimensional spectra of luminous type 2 AGN (as is the case for at least $45 \pm 3\%$ of objects; see Sect. 4.3.1 and Fig. 4.2), they are always found over galaxy-wide scales. To assess how confident

we can be of the fraction of extended ionised outflows within our selection criteria we ran Monte Carlo simulations. To do this, we took 246 mock galaxies (i.e., the number from the parent catalogue that met our selection criteria; Sect. 4.3.1), assigned them as either “extended” or “not-extended” (in various ratios) and randomly drew 16 objects from this sample 10^4 times. We found that, at most, 30% of the sources can be “not-extended” in the parent population for the probability of selecting 16 “extended” sources by random chance to be $\leq 0.3\%$ (i.e., the 3σ confidence level). In other words, when broad and luminous emission-line components are observed in one-dimensional spectra (i.e., when $\gtrsim 30\%$ of the ionised gas appears to be outflowing; Sect. 4.3.1) of luminous ($L_{[\text{O III}]}$ $> 5 \times 10^{41}$ erg s^{-1}) $z < 0.2$ type 2 AGN, we can be confident, with 3σ significance, that in *at least 70%* of instances these features are extended on kiloparsec scales or greater.

In Fig. 4.8 we show the W_{80} maps for the whole sample to illustrate the morphology of the outflows. From this figure we can see a large diversity in the morphology.

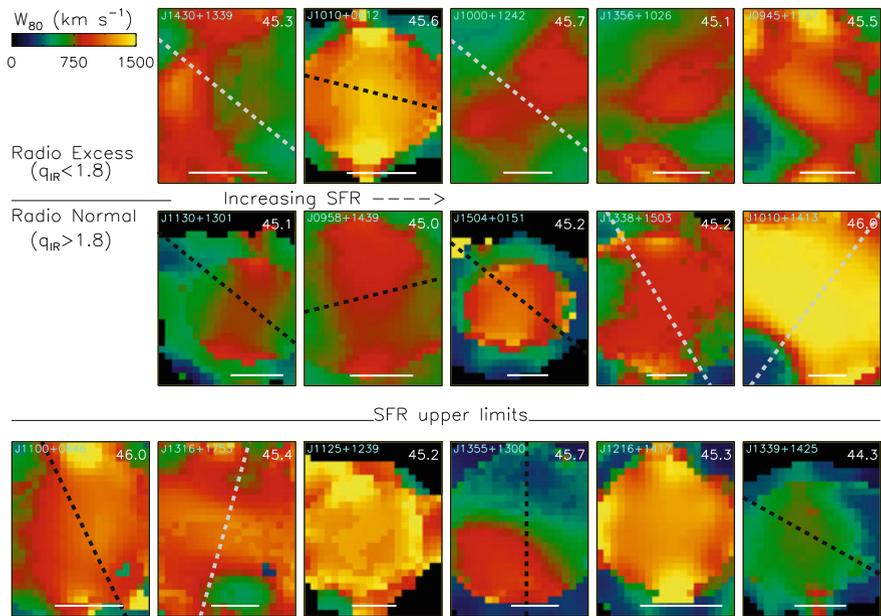


Fig. 4.8 Maps of W_{80} for all sixteen type 2 AGN in our sample that illustrate the spatial extent and morphology of the outflows (Sect. 4.5.2.2). The maps are ordered in an identical manner to Fig. 4.7. The *dashed lines* correspond to the “major axes” based on the kinematics of the narrow *emission-line* components (Sect. 4.4.3). *Black dashed lines* are those with *blue to red* velocity gradients indicative of rotation (i.e., “R” in Table 4.4) and *grey* are those with irregular *blue to red* velocity gradients (i.e., “R/I” in Table 4.4). Sources without a clear *blue to red* velocity gradient do not have these “major axes” shown. The solid horizontal bars represent 3kpc in extent and the number in the *top-right* of each map is $\log[L_{\text{AGN}}; \text{erg s}^{-1}]$ for that source. We observe a wide variety in the morphology of the kinematically disturbed ionised gas and there is no obvious connection between outflow morphology and SFR, radio excess or AGN luminosity

Several of the sources show a preferential axis, which is orientated away from the galaxy “major axis” (albeit not always perpendicular); however, in some cases we require a stronger constraint on the major axis of the host galaxies to confirm the relative orientations. This is consistent with the collimated winds emerging along the minor axis seen in star-forming galaxies (e.g., Heckman et al. 1990; Rupke and Veilleux 2013). The most impressive outflows that we observe are those which have the kinematic features of $\approx 10\text{--}15$ kpc scale super-bubbles; i.e., high-velocity bipolar emission-line regions each side of the nucleus. Combining our IFU data with archival imaging and spectroscopic data we identify three super-bubble candidates (one was previously known: J1356+1026; Greene et al. 2012 and, as far as we are aware, two are new: J1000+1242 and J1430+1339). In two cases (J1356+1026 and J1430+1339) we only observe the base of these bubbles and therefore require IFU observations with a larger field-of-view to fully characterise the kinematics of the outflow structure. In the third case (J1000+1242) we see a clear blue and red sided outflow. Similar outflows have been seen in galaxies both with and without luminous AGN (e.g., Veilleux et al. 1994; Greene et al. 2012; Rupke and Veilleux 2013).

In four of our targets the morphologies of the outflows are circular (Fig. 4.8) with reasonably constant W_{80} and Δv values seen across the extent of the emission-line regions. This kinematic structure is seen in the majority of the more luminous type 2 AGN in Liu et al. (2013b) who argue that these structures are characteristic of spherically symmetric, or wide-angle bi-conal outflows, and a power-law [O III] surface-brightness profile (see Liu et al. 2014 for similar observations of type 1 AGN). We note that circular morphologies could (at least partially) be an artefact of the fitting routine since in areas of low surface brightness only single Gaussian components are fit and we are not able to fully characterise the emission-line profile (see Sect. 4.4.2); however, this is not likely to be the full explanation for the observed morphologies (see Fig. 5 of Liu et al. 2013b). Finally, in one source (J1355+1300) we observe a spatially distinct high-velocity region, offset from the nucleus, that has a few possible interpretations including a small-scale outflowing bubble.

4.5.3 *Outflow Properties: Estimates of Mass, Energy and Momentum*

The mass, energy and momentum being carried by galaxy-wide outflows are important quantities to constrain in order to understand the role that outflows play in galaxy formation (discussed in Sect. 4.6.2) and to also help determine the physical mechanisms that are driving them (discussed in Sect. 4.6.1). Outflows are likely to be entraining gas in multiple phases (i.e., ionised, molecular and neutral) and multiple gas phase observations are required to fully characterise the outflow properties (e.g., Shih and Rupke 2010; Mahony et al. 2013; Rupke and Veilleux 2013). However, the warm ionised gas, which we observe in our observations, provides initial information on the outflows in this sample and could represent a large fraction of the

overall mass and energy of the total outflows, as has been shown for some AGN (e.g., Rupke and Veilleux 2013). The kinematic structures of the outflows across our sample are diverse and complex (see Sect. 4.5.2.2) which makes accurate characterisation of the outflows challenging without doing detailed kinematic modelling of individual systems. However, as is often invoked throughout the literature, we can apply some simple outflow models to the whole sample to provide first order constraints on the mass, energy and momentum involved in the outflows and to enable a direct comparison to other studies. As most of the calculations outlined below require measurements of the $H\beta$ luminosity we do not include the three sources where we did not make this measurement (see Sect. 4.4.2).

The observed ionised gas mass (i.e., the gas which is emitting in $H\beta$) can be estimated assuming purely photoionised gas with “Case B” recombination and an electron temperature of $T = 10^4$ K (see Appendix A). We calculate ionised gas masses for our targets following Equation A.4.4. However, to be consistent with Liu et al. (2013b), we use the exact equation for of this equation as provided in Nesvadba et al. (2011). However, we note that the normalisation Nesvadba et al. (2011) use is a factor of four higher than the correct theoretical value (see Equation A.4.4). This factor of four difference to the quoted normalisation constant has no significant bearing on our order of magnitude estimates of the gas mass.

Using our extinction un-corrected $L_{H\beta}$ values (Table 4.2), we obtain total observed ionised gas masses of $M_{\text{gas}} = (2-40) \times 10^7 M_{\odot}$, assuming the commonly adopted $n_e = 100 \text{ cm}^{-3}$ (e.g., Liu et al. 2013b), or $M_{\text{gas}} = (0.4-8) \times 10^7 M_{\odot}$ assuming our median value of $n_e = 500 \text{ cm}^{-3}$. We note that the ionised gas phase will make up only a fraction of the *total* gas content. For example, taking a typical SFR for our targets ($40 M_{\odot} \text{ yr}^{-1}$) and assuming a star forming region of ≈ 1 kpc would imply molecular gas masses of $\approx 10^{10} M_{\odot}$ (Genzel et al. 2011)

The simplest method that we can use to estimate the total kinetic energy in the outflows is to take the mass of the gas, travelling at a velocity v_{gas} and calculate $E_{\text{kin}} = \frac{1}{2} M_{\text{gas}} v_{\text{gas}}^2$. Following Liu et al. (2013b) we assume that all of the observed ionised gas is involved in the outflow (see their work and Harrison et al. 2014 for motivation of this) with a bulk-outflow velocity $v_{\text{gas}} = W_{80}/1.3$ (suitable for the spherically symmetric or wide-angle bi-cone outflow models outlined Liu et al. (2013b); see also Harrison et al. 2012 for different arguments on using line-widths to estimate the bulk velocities). Across the sample this leads to total kinetic energies of $E_{\text{kin}} = (0.5-50) \times 10^{56}$ erg. Assuming the typical maximum radial extent of the outflows is 6 kpc (see Table 4.4) and a continuous outflow, this implies outflow lifetimes of $t_{\text{out}} \approx 6 \text{ kpc}/v_{\text{gas}} = (5-11) \text{ Myrs}$ and consequently outflow kinetic energy rates of $\dot{E}_{\text{kin}} = (0.1-30) \times 10^{42} \text{ erg s}^{-1}$.

An alternative approach to calculate the mass and energetic outflow rates is to assume a spherical volume of outflowing ionised gas (following e.g., Rodríguez Zaurín et al. 2013; see also Holt et al. 2006; see Appendix A). To match Rodríguez Zaurín et al. (2013) we take the outflow velocity to be $v_{\text{out}} = \Delta v$, the velocity dispersion to be $\sigma = W_{80}/2.355$, the outflow radius to be $r = R_{[\text{O III}]}$ (Table 4.4) and again use $n_e = 100 \text{ cm}^{-3}$. The mass outflow rates and energy outflow rates are calculated following Equation A.4.6 and Equation A.4.11, respectively. Using this approach

(we will call “Method 1”) we obtain $\dot{M}_{\text{out},M1} = 3\text{--}70M_{\odot} \text{ yr}^{-1}$ and $\dot{E}_{\text{out},M1} = (0.3\text{--}30) \times 10^{42} \text{ erg s}^{-1}$. This range in outflow kinetic energy rate is in excellent agreement with the range of values using the previous method, which we will now ignore, and the two methods agree within a factor ≤ 3 for all sources. Both of these methods provide lower limits, as we are only observing the line-emitting gas and hence the total mass involved in the outflow could be much higher (see also e.g., Greene et al. 2011; Liu et al. 2013b).

We also consider the mass and energy injection rates assuming an energy conserving bubble in a uniform medium (e.g., Heckman et al. 1990; Veilleux et al. 2005; Nesvadba et al. 2006; Appendix A). We following Equation A.4.11 and assume $r_{10} = 0.6$ for all sources (see Table 4.4), $v_{1000} = W_{80}/1300$ and $n_{0.5} \approx 1$. Using this method (we will call “Method 2”) we obtain values of $\dot{E}_{\text{out},M2} \approx (0.7\text{--}7) \times 10^{45} \text{ erg s}^{-1}$. The mass outflow rates are then given by $\dot{M}_{\text{out},M2} = 2\dot{E}_{\text{out},M2}/v_c^2 \approx (9\text{--}20) \times 10^3 M_{\odot} \text{ yr}^{-1}$.

We consider “Method 1” and “Method 2” to be lower and upper bounds of the mass outflow rates and kinetic energy rates (see also discussion in Greene et al. 2012) and the fiducial values we will use throughout are the mean (in log space) of these two values which are $\dot{E}_{\text{out}} = (0.15\text{--}45) \times 10^{44} \text{ erg s}^{-1}$ and $\dot{M}_{\text{out}} = 170\text{--}1200M_{\odot} \text{ yr}^{-1}$. Comparing these values to those found using the approach followed in Liu et al. (2013a, b) provides confirmation that using these fiducial values are reasonable (see details in Harrison et al. 2014). Finally, in preparation for our discussion in Sect. 4.6.1, we estimate the mean and upper and lower bounds of outflow momentum rates by taking the mass outflow rates calculated above and assuming $\dot{P}_{\text{out}} = \dot{M}_{\text{out}} v_{\text{gas}}$.

4.6 Discussion

We have presented our IFU data for a sample of sixteen luminous type 2 AGN which traces the ionised gas kinematics (via [O III] and H β emission lines) over kiloparsec scales. We have decoupled the kinematics of outflows from other kinematic components, such as galaxy dynamics and mergers, and shows that energetic, galaxy-wide ionised outflows are ubiquitous in our sample. Our sample is selected from a well constrained parent sample so that we can place our observations into the context of the overall AGN population. In this section we use our observations, combined with previous observations from the literature, to discuss the likely driving mechanisms of the outflows (Sect. 4.6.1) and the role that these outflows may play in galaxy evolution (Sect. 4.6.2).

4.6.1 What Drives the Outflows?

The dominant processes that drive galaxy-wide outflows in massive galaxies and the efficiency to which they are able to couple to the gas are currently sources of uncertainty in galaxy formation models. Several possible mechanisms have been

suggested to drive galaxy-wide outflows, for example: the mechanical input from stellar winds and supernovae (e.g., Leithere et al. 1999; Heckman et al. 1990); direct radiation pressure from the luminosity of an AGN or star formation (e.g., Murray et al. 2005); the interaction of radio jets (launched by the AGN) with a clumpy and multiphase ISM (e.g., Sutherland and Bicknell 2007; Wagner et al. 2012); and AGN winds, initially launched at the accretion disk, that propagate through the galaxy and sweep up the ISM (e.g., King et al. 2011; Faucher-Giguère and Quataert 2012). In this subsection we will investigate which of these processes could be responsible for driving the outflows observed in our targets.

4.6.1.1 Morphology and Structure

A possible method to distinguish between an AGN-driven and star-formation driven outflow could be the morphology and structure of the outflow. Galactic-scale star-formation driven outflows are known to propagate along low density regions, perpendicular to galaxy discs (e.g., Heckman et al. 1987; Ohyama et al. 2002; Veilleux et al. 2005). In contrast, outflows driven by an AGN on *small scales* have no relation between the orientation of the outflow and the disk in the host galaxy (e.g., Fischer et al. 2013). However, if AGN-driven outflows propagate to galaxy-wide scales they may also be forced to propagate away from the galaxy disk along a path of least resistance (e.g., Faucher-Giguère and Quataert 2012; Gabor and Bournaud 2014) which could make galactic-scale outflows driven from a nuclear star forming region or an AGN indistinguishable (see also Hopkins and Elvis 2010; Heckman et al. 2011 and Diamond-Stanic et al. 2012 for other reasons why it could be difficult to distinguish between AGN and star formation driven outflows). In some observations compact radio jets (\lesssim few kiloparsec in size) are inferred to play a role, where the combination of high resolution radio data and spatially resolved spectroscopy has shown that high velocity gas (in multiple phases) is spatially co-incident with radio emission (Baldwin et al. 1980; Whittle et al. 1988; Capetti et al. 1999; Whittle and Wilson 2004; Morganti et al. 2005, 2013; Emonts et al. 2005; Leipski and Bennert 2006; Barbosa et al. 2009; Fu and Stockton 2009; Storchi-Bergmann et al. 2010; Shih et al. 2013). However, even when radio jets *are* present it appears that they may not always be fully responsible for the observed outflows and other processes are also required (e.g., Villar-Martín et al. 1999; Rupke and Veilleux 2011; Riffel et al. 2014).

The morphologies of the outflows in our targets are illustrated in Fig. 4.8. In our sample we observe no obvious relationship between the morphology of the observed outflows and the SFRs, AGN luminosities or radio excess parameters of the host galaxies; i.e., irrespective of the host galaxy or AGN properties we see a range in outflow morphology including those which are escaping away from the galaxy discs. This is in broad agreement with Rupke and Veilleux (2013) who find no structural difference between the outflows in the ULIRGs with and without luminous AGN. Interestingly, all of superbubble candidates are radio excess sources (see Sect. 4.5.2.2). However, deeper and higher-resolution radio data are required to search for small

and low luminosity radio jets, which we cannot identify in the FIRST data, and to ultimately determine the origin of the radio emission (see Sect. 4.3.3).

4.6.1.2 Outflow Velocities Compared to AGN and Galaxy Properties

Another possible method to determine the driving mechanism of outflows is to search for trends between outflow properties and properties of the host galaxy or AGN. Positive correlations have been claimed to exist between outflow properties, albeit using different observations, for each of SFR (e.g., Rupke et al. 2005; Martin 2005; Bradshaw et al. 2013), AGN luminosity (e.g., Cicone et al. 2014) and radio luminosity (e.g., Nesvadba et al. 2011). Of course these analyses are complicated by the fact that AGN luminosity, SFR and radio luminosity are closely related (e.g., Tadhunter et al. 1998; Ivison et al. 2010; Mullaney et al. 2012; Chen et al. 2013) and that small duty cycles may mean that an AGN-driven outflow may be observed when the AGN itself is no longer observable (e.g., King et al. 2011; Gabor and Bournaud 2014).

In Fig. 4.9 we show that the line widths (W_{80}) and maximum velocities (v_{02}) of our sample are comparable to those found in more luminous type 2 AGN (Liu et al. 2013b) and ULIRG-AGN composite galaxies (Rodríguez Zaurín et al. 2013).⁷ We observe no clear trends between v_{02} or W_{80} and $L_{[\text{O III}]}$, despite four orders of magnitude in [O III] luminosity. Additionally, although limited in dynamic range, we do not see any obvious correlation in W_{80} or v_{02} with radio luminosity (Fig. 4.9). These conclusions are consistent with Mullaney et al. (2013) who demonstrate that the broadest emission lines are prevalent for AGN with radio luminosities of $L_{1.4\text{GHz}} \gtrsim 10^{23} \text{ WHz}^{-1}$ (i.e., the range that is covered in Fig. 4.9), but found no clear trends with [O III] luminosity when taking radio-luminosity matched samples of AGN. We note that Fig. 4.1 is not radio-luminosity matched so gives an apparent positive trend between [O III] luminosity and line width; see Mullaney et al. (2013) for details.

In Fig. 4.10 we compare the galaxy-integrated line-widths (W_{80}) and maximum velocities (v_{02}) to the infrared luminosities from star formation ($L_{\text{IR,SF}}$; a proxy for SFR), bolometric AGN luminosities (L_{AGN}) and the radio excess parameter (q_{IR}) derived in Sect. 4.3.3. We also compare to the ULIRG-AGN composite galaxies from Rodríguez Zaurín et al. (2013)⁸ and the $z < 0.06$ ULIRGs from Rupke and Veilleux (2013) (who make these velocity measurements from various ionised

⁷Although (Rodríguez Zaurín et al. 2013) do not quote the values of W_{80} and v_{02} directly, we reconstructed the emission-line profiles (from the Gaussian components given in their paper) and then measured these values directly.

⁸We fit the SEDs to the IRAS and WISE data for these sources in a consistent manner to that described in Sect. 4.3.3; however, we only accept AGN components if the AGN template contributes $\geq 50\%$ of the flux at $19 \mu\text{m}$ due to the difficulty in reliably identifying low-luminosity AGN in ULIRGs using this method (see Del Moro et al. 2013). Eight of these ULIRGs also have AGN luminosities derived from Spitzer infrared spectra in Veilleux et al. (2009) that we use in favour of our AGN luminosities. We found that the AGN luminosities and IR luminosities are well matched (within a factor of $\lesssim 2$) between our method and that in Veilleux et al. (2009).

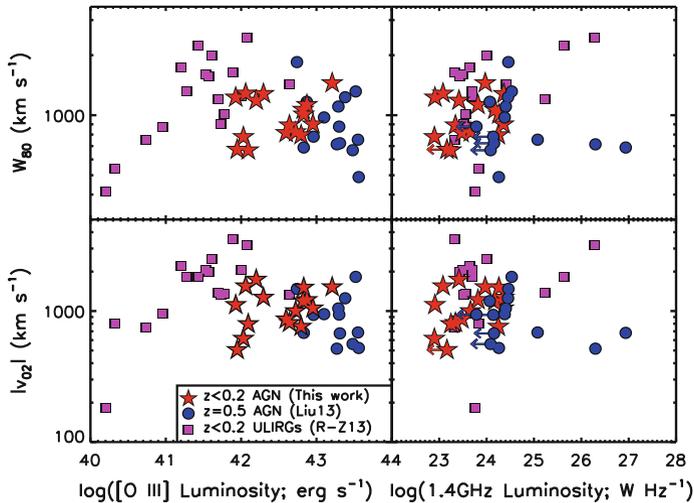


Fig. 4.9 Line-width (W_{80}) and maximum velocity (v_{02}) versus [O III] luminosity and 1.4GHz radio luminosity for our targets (*stars*; see Tables 4.2 and 4.4). Also shown are $z \approx 0.3$ – 0.6 type 2 quasars (*circles*; Liu et al. 2013b) and $z < 0.2$ ULIRG–AGN (*squares*; Rodríguez Zaurín et al. 2013). High velocity and disturbed ionised gas is found in AGN over four orders of magnitude in both [O III] and radio luminosity; however, no clear trends are observed between these quantities from these samples

emission-line species). In Fig. 4.10, the only possible trend we observe is between the maximum velocity (v_{02}) and AGN luminosity, although we are limited in measurements below $L_{\text{AGN}} = 10^{45} \text{ erg s}^{-1}$. Based on these samples, although high-velocity outflow features are observed across the samples, the most extreme velocities (i.e., $v_{02} \gtrsim 2000 \text{ km s}^{-1}$) and line-widths (i.e., $W_{80} \gtrsim 1500 \text{ km s}^{-1}$) appear to be predominantly found in the quasar-ULIRG composite galaxies (Fig. 4.10). This is in broad agreement with other studies of the outflows in ULIRGs and quasars, in multiple different gas phases, that find the most extreme outflows in the quasar-ULIRG composites (e.g., Harrison et al. 2012; Westmoquette et al. 2012; Veilleux et al. 2013; Cicone et al. 2014; Hill and Zakamska 2014). Further evidence that the incidence of extreme ionised outflows in quasar-ULIRG composite galaxies is high, compared to the overall population, is that 16/17 of the objects in Rodríguez Zaurín et al. (2013) have extreme ionised gas kinematics (i.e., significant broad [O III] emission-line components) which is much larger than we find for the overall optical AGN population (see Sect. 4.3.1), and considerably higher than expected given their moderate [O III] luminosities (i.e., $L_{[\text{O III}]} \lesssim 10^{42} \text{ erg s}^{-1}$; Fig. 4.1). Furthermore, the flux-weighted average line-widths ($\text{FWHM}_{\text{avg}} \gtrsim 800 \text{ km s}^{-1}$) of these quasar-ULIRG composites are representative of the top ≈ 2 – 3% most extreme objects in Mullaney et al. (2013). This result is not sufficient to establish which process is driving the observed outflows, but instead may demonstrate that the most extreme outflows are most prevalent

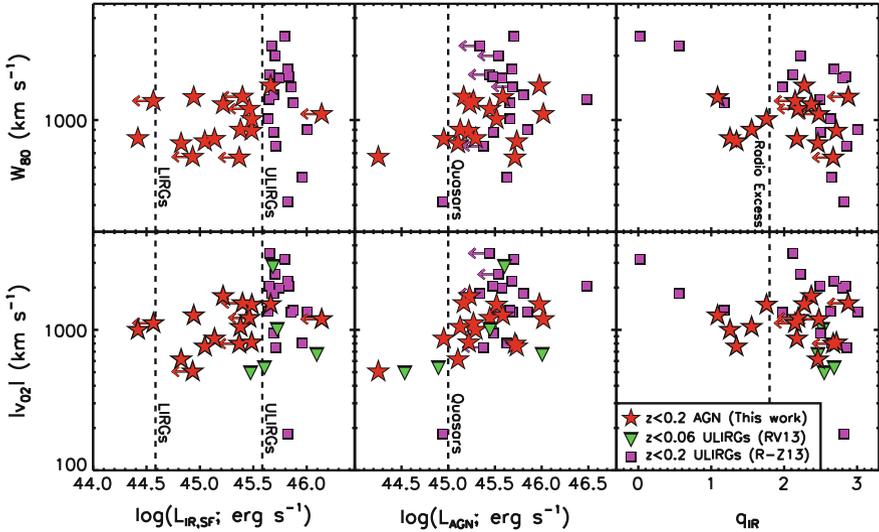


Fig. 4.10 Line-width (W_{80}) and maximum velocity (v_{02}) versus infrared luminosity from star formation, AGN luminosity and q_{IR} for our targets (*stars*; see Tables 4.2 and 4.4). Also shown are $z < 0.2$ ULIRG–AGN composite galaxies (*squares*; Rodríguez Zaurín et al. 2013) and $z < 0.06$ ULIRGs (*triangles*; Rupke and Veilleux 2013). There is tentative evidence that most extreme velocities and line-widths are preferentially found in systems with high star-formation rates (i.e., ULIRGs) that host the most luminous AGN (i.e., ‘quasars’). There is no such effect seen when comparing systems where there is excess radio emission AGN; however, low-level excess radio emission is difficult to identify using this method especially in high SFR systems (see Sect. 4.3.3)

during an active star formation and AGN phase as is predicted by some evolutionary models (e.g., Sanders et al. 1988; Hopkins et al. 2008).

Finally, we note that Mullaney et al. (2013) show that the fraction of sources with their ionised gas dominated by outflows, was considerably higher for sources with moderate-to-high radio luminosities ($L_{1.4\text{GHz}} \gtrsim 10^{23} \text{ W Hz}^{-1}$). Based on the analysis of the radio emission in our sources and the comparison samples (Sect. 4.3.3; Fig. 4.10), star formation could contribute considerably to the radio emission at these luminosities. Additionally, as noted by Zakamska and Greene (2014), radio emission could be produced by shocks due to outflows that were driven by e.g., quasar winds. Further analysis of the parent population is required to establish the physical process that is driving the trend between radio luminosity and ionised outflows.

4.6.1.3 Coupling Efficiencies and Momentum Fluxes

A popular method to investigate the likely drivers of galactic-scale outflows is to compare the energy and momentum available from each potential driver (i.e., supernovae and stellar winds, radiation pressure [from AGN or star formation], AGN winds, or radio jets) to the kinetic energy and momentum in the outflows. Although we are limited by a large uncertainty in the outflow kinetic energies (see Sect. 4.5.3), we

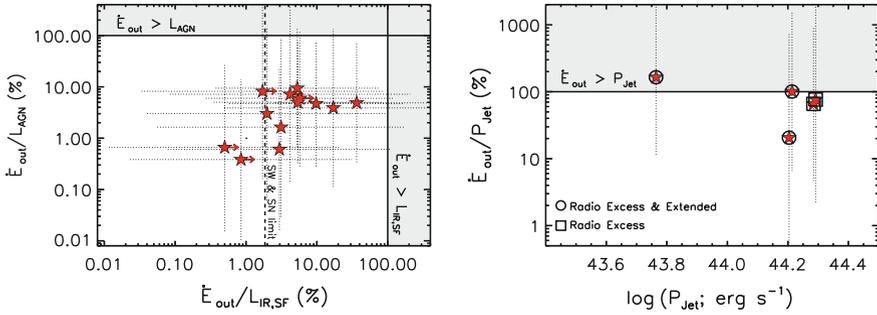


Fig. 4.11 *Left panel* The ratio of our estimated outflow kinetic energy rates (\dot{E}_{out} ; Sect. 4.5.3) to the AGN luminosity (ordinate) and to the star-formation luminosity (abscissa) for the thirteen sources in our sample for which we estimated \dot{E}_{out} . The *dotted lines* illustrate the ratios from using our upper and lower bounds on the \dot{E}_{out} values (Sect. 4.5.3). The shaded regions indicate where $> 100\%$ coupling efficiency is required between the input energy and the gas to power the outflows. The *dashed vertical line* is the estimated maximum mechanical input expected from supernovae and stellar winds (see Sect. 4.6.1). *Right panel* Similar to the *left panel*, but showing the ratio of \dot{E}_{out} to the estimated jet power, as a function of jet power, for the five sources with the strongest evidence of hosting radio jets (see Sect. 4.3.3). Based on our simplifying assumptions a similar outflow coupling efficiency is required for AGN (i.e., $\approx 0.5\text{--}10\%$) and star formation (i.e., $\gtrsim 0.5\text{--}40\%$); however, stellar winds and supernovae are less likely to be fully responsible for the observed outflows. Radio jets would require uncomfortably high coupling efficiencies to power the outflows in some cases (although see Sect. 4.6.1)

have measured SFRs and AGN luminosities and have identified the sources that are most likely to host radio jets (see Sect. 4.3.3 and Table 4.2). In Fig. 4.11 we compare the ratio of our outflow kinetic energy rates (\dot{E}_{out}) with (1) the bolometric AGN luminosities; (2) the infrared star-formation luminosities⁹ and (3) the mechanical radio jet power (estimated using the 1.4 GHz luminosity and the relationship in Cavagnolo et al. 2010). In Fig. 4.12 we compare the momentum rates of the outflows (\dot{P}_{out}) with the momentum flux output radiatively by (1) star formation (i.e., $L_{\text{IR,SF}}/c$) and (2) the AGN (i.e., L_{AGN}/c). Using these results we now explore the plausibility of different potential driving mechanisms and compare to theoretical predictions.

Figure 4.11 shows that a similar outflow coupling efficiency is required to both of the radiative output of the AGN (i.e., $\approx 0.5\text{--}10\%$) and that of star formation (i.e., $\gtrsim 0.5\text{--}40\%$), indicating that either of these processes could power the outflows if they are able to couple their energy to the gas. One way for star formation to drive an outflow is from stellar winds and supernovae. An estimate of the maximum energy injection from stellar winds and supernovae, which is used throughout the literature, is $\approx 7 \times 10^{41} (\text{SFR}/M_{\odot} \text{ yr}^{-1}) \text{ erg s}^{-1}$ (applicable for stellar ages $\gtrsim 40 \text{ Myrs}$ and following Leithere et al. 1999; Veilleux et al. 2005).¹⁰ This corresponds to a maximum

⁹We note that for infrared luminous galaxies (i.e., $L_{\text{IR}} \geq 10^{11} L_{\odot}$), the infrared luminosity makes up the bulk of the bolometric luminosity; e.g., Sanders and Mirabel 1996; Veilleux et al. 2005.

¹⁰If we were to follow instead Dalla Vecchia and Schaye 2008 to estimate this energy input, the values would be a factor of ≈ 2 lower.

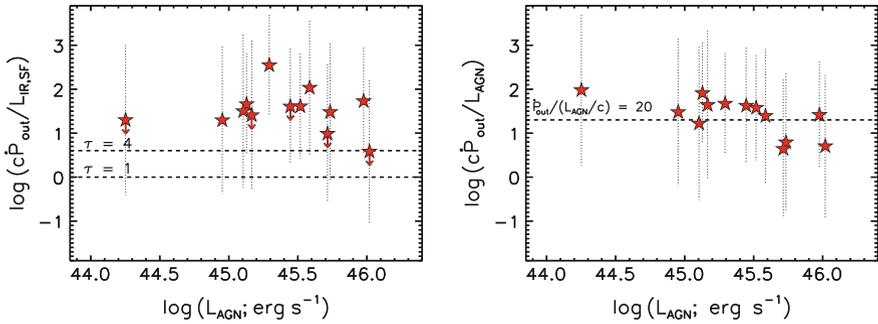


Fig. 4.12 *Left Panel* Momentum rates of the outflows (\dot{P}_{out}) normalised to the star formation luminosity ($L_{\text{IR,SF}}/c$) versus AGN luminosity. The *dashed lines* represent the required optical depths if the outflows are driven by radiation pressure from star formation (see Sect. 4.6.1). *Right Panel* Momentum rate of the outflows normalised to the AGN luminosities (L_{AGN}/c) versus AGN luminosity. In both panels the vertical *dotted lines* represent the upper and lower bounds in \dot{P}_{out} (see Sect. 4.5.3). Based on our assumptions, the outflows are unlikely to be purely radiatively driven but are broadly consistent with theoretical predictions of galactic-scale energy-driven outflows that are launched by an AGN accretion-disc wind (i.e., $\dot{P}_{\text{out}} \gtrsim 10\text{--}40L_{\text{AGN}}/c$; e.g., Zubovas and King 2012; Faucher-Giguère and Quataert 2012; Debuhr et al. 2012)

$\dot{E}_{\text{out}}/L_{\text{IR,SF}} \approx 2\%$ (following Kennicutt 1998 but correcting to a Chabrier IMF) that we indicate Fig. 4.11. Based on these assumptions, stellar winds and supernovae are unlikely to be fully responsible for the observed outflows. If we instead consider a momentum driven wind with momentum deposition from the radiation pressure of stars, we expect $\dot{P}_{\text{out}} = \tau L_{\text{SF,IR}}/c$ (following Murray et al. 2005) that, based on our calculations, would require unrealistically high optical depths (i.e., $\tau \gg 1$; see Fig. 4.12). Further investigation of the possibility that star formation drives the outflows could be achieved using high resolution optical-continuum imaging to measure the SFR surface densities in our targets (e.g., Murray et al. 2011; Heckman et al. 2011; Diamond-Stanic et al. 2012; Förster Schreiber et al. 2014).

The estimated coupling efficiencies between the bolometric AGN luminosity and the outflows (i.e., $\approx 0.5\text{--}10\%$) are consistent with those predicted by various models (e.g., Di Matteo et al. 2005; Hopkins and Elvis 2010; Zubovas and King 2012; Debuhr et al. 2012). However, we note that these coupling efficiencies do not tell us *how* the AGN couples to the gas. It is thought that direct radiation pressure from an AGN is unlikely to drive momentum-driven galaxy-wide outflows (e.g., King et al. 2011; Debuhr et al. 2012) and this is supported by the high outflow momentum rates we observe (Fig. 4.12). However, it has been predicted that for high-accretion rate AGN, an accretion-disc wind could sweep up material and become a galaxy-wide energy-driven outflow (e.g., King et al. 2011; Faucher-Giguère and Quataert 2012; Debuhr et al. 2012; Zubovas and King 2012). These models predict momentum rates of $\dot{P}_{\text{out}} \approx 10\text{--}40L_{\text{AGN}}/c$ on $\approx 1\text{--}10\text{ kpc}$ scales, that is in good agreement with our observations (Fig. 4.12) as well as multi-gas-phase outflow observations of other AGN (e.g., Ciccone et al. 2014; Zubovas and King 2012 and references there-in). An

AGN could also couple to the gas in their host galaxies though the interaction of a radio jet with the ISM. In Fig. 4.11 we show that the coupling efficiencies between the radio jet power and the outflows is estimated to be $\approx 20\text{--}160\%$ (calculated for the sources with the strongest evidence for radio AGN activity only; see Sect. 4.3.3). These basic calculations may rule out radio jets being solely responsible for all of the outflows observed (Fig. 4.11). However, see the Appendix of Harrison et al. 2014 as well as later chapters in this thesis, for a detailed discussion on the radio emission in individual objects. Furthermore, these numbers are uncertain and reasonably high coupling efficiencies are predicted for outflows driven by jet-ISM interactions (e.g., Wagner et al. 2012 predict $\approx 10\text{--}40\%$).

In summary, based on our analyses we find no definitive evidence that the outflows we observe are universally driven by the AGN (either launched by accretion-disk winds or radio jets) or by star formation. However, using the arguments that we have presented we find that supernovae, stellar winds, radio jets or radiation pressure are unlikely to be solely responsible for all of the outflows that we observe. Although uncertain, we have shown that the outflows we observe have properties that are broadly consistent with predictions of energy-conserving outflows that are initially driven by accretion-disk winds. It is certainly viable that multiple processes contribute to driving the observed outflows as has been seen in local systems, where star-formation winds, nuclear winds (potentially AGN-driven) and radio jets all are playing a role (e.g., Cecil et al. 2001; Storch-Bergmann et al. 2010; Rupke and Veilleux 2011). As has been highlighted throughout this section, multi-phase (i.e., ionised, atomic and molecular) observations of the outflows, combined with high resolution multi-wavelength imaging will provide the required information to determine the relative role of these different outflow driving mechanisms in our targets.

4.6.2 *What Role Do These Outflows Play in Galaxy Evolution?*

Galaxy-wide outflows are required in galaxy formation models, driven by both star formation and AGN activity, to reproduce the observable properties of galaxies and the intergalactic medium (e.g., Silk and Rees 1998; Di Matteo et al. 2005; Hopkins et al. 2008; Dalla Vecchia and Schaye 2008 Booth and Schaye 2010; Debuhr et al. 2012; Hopkins et al. 2013a). In these models some fraction of the gas escapes from the potential of the host galaxy, regulating future star formation and black hole growth and enriching the larger-scale environment with metals. In this section we will assess what impact the outflows that we observed may have on the evolution of their host galaxies.

If we consider the estimated mass outflow rates (derived in Sect. 4.5.3) we find that they are $\approx 6\text{--}20$ times greater than the SFRs of our targets (with one exception at 100 times [J1430+1339] and excluding upper limits). These “mass loading” values are typically higher than those observed in star-forming galaxies but similar to those seen

in luminous AGN, derived from a variety of observations of outflows in different gas phases (e.g., Martin 1999; Heckman et al. 2000; Newman et al. 2012; Cicone et al. 2014). We do not know the multi-phase outflowing gas properties of our targets; however, these observations imply that the star forming material may be rapidly depleted, as has also been suggested from molecular gas observations of a few nearby ULIRG-AGN composite galaxies (Cicone et al. 2014).

We can assess if the outflows will be able to escape the potential of their host galaxies. The escape velocities of typical type 2 AGN within the luminosity range of our sample are $\approx 500\text{--}1000\text{ km s}^{-1}$ (assuming an isothermal sphere of mass out to 100 kpc; Greene et al. 2011). These escape velocities correspond to circular velocities of $\approx 200\text{--}400\text{ km s}^{-1}$, which are likely to be representative of the intrinsic values for our galaxies, based on those in which we identify rotation (see Sect. 4.5.2.1). If we assume the intrinsic bulk velocities of the outflows are $v_{\text{out}} = W_{80}/1.3$ (see Sect. 4.5.3) then we have a range of outflow velocities $v_{\text{out}} = 510\text{--}1100\text{ km s}^{-1}$ (with a median of 780 km s^{-1}) which are comparable to the escape velocities. The maximum projected velocities are even higher (up to $v_{02} \approx -1700\text{ km s}^{-1}$; Table 4.4). If we instead consider a $\approx 10^{11} M_{\odot}$ galaxy inside a $\approx 10^{13} M_{\odot}$ dark matter halo with Navarro-Frenk-White (Navarro et al. 1996) density profile, the gas is unlikely to escape unless it is travelling at $\gtrsim 1000\text{ km s}^{-1}$ (see the calculation in Sect. 5.2 of Harrison et al. 2012). Indeed, some models have shown that even massive outflows may stall in the galaxy halo, re-collapse and cool at later times (along with new fuel supplies), resulting in re-ignition of star formation and black hole growth (e.g., Lagos et al. 2008; McCarthy et al. 2011; Gabor et al. 2011; Rosas-Guevara et al. 2015; Hopkins et al. 2013b; see also Gabor and Bournaud 2014).

In summary, while it is not possible to constrain the ultimate fate of outflowing gas from observations, we have observed outflows with extremely high velocities and the estimated outflow kinetic energy rates (i.e., $\approx 0.5\text{--}10\%$ of L_{AGN}) and momentum rates ($\gtrsim 10\text{--}20 \times L_{\text{AGN}}/c$) are in broad agreement with the requirements of models that invoke AGN-driven outflows to regulate star formation and black hole growth in luminous AGN (e.g., Di Matteo et al. 2005; Hopkins and Elvis 2010; Debuhr et al. 2012). Even if the outflows do not escape the galaxy halos, they may be the required pre-cursor to the postulated “maintenance mode” of feedback that appears to be necessary to control the level of cooling in massive halos at later times (e.g., Churazov et al. 2005; McCarthy et al. 2011; Gabor et al. 2011; Bower et al. 2012).

4.7 Conclusions

In this chapter we aimed to address the question: *how common are kilo-parsec scale ionised outflows in the host galaxies of powerful active galactic nuclei (AGN; i.e., quasars) and what are their properties (e.g., spatial extents, morphologies and energetics)?* To answer this question, we made use of a parent sample of $\approx 24,000$ AGN (Mullaney et al. 2013), for which we had previously analysed their one-dimensional

optical spectra. By selecting sources for detailed follow-up observation from such a sample, it is possible to measure the prevalence and properties of kilo-parsec ionised outflows in the population as a whole.

We selected sixteen $z = 0.08\text{--}0.2$ type 2 AGN for IFU observations, from our parent sample (Mullaney et al. 2013) that have luminosities indicative of the systems predicted to drive powerful galaxy-wide outflows (i.e., $L_{[\text{O III}]} \geq 5 \times 10^{41} \text{ erg s}^{-1}$). Using the one-dimensional spectra, we demonstrated that $45 \pm 3\%$ of the parent sample, that met our selection criteria, have a significant fraction of their gas outflowing (i.e., $\gtrsim 30\%$; Sect. 4.3.1). The fraction of AGN with ionised outflows at lower levels will be much higher. The sixteen objects that we observed represent this 45% of the parent population. We use infrared SED decomposition on our targets to derive SFRs ($\lesssim [10\text{--}100]M_{\odot} \text{ yr}^{-1}$) and AGN luminosities ($L_{\text{AGN}} = 10^{44.3}\text{--}10^{46.0} \text{ erg s}^{-1}$) for our targets. We also show that the radio emission in our targets (luminosity range: $L_{1.4 \text{ GHz}} \leq 10^{24.4} \text{ W Hz}^{-1}$) is due to a combination of star formation and other processes, with five targets showing a “radio excess” above that expected from star formation that could be due to radio jets or shocks (Sect. 4.3.3). In summary, our targets are taken from a well constrained parent sample and are not extreme star-forming galaxies or radio loud AGN that have been the focus of many similar studies.

We observed our targets with the Gemini-GMOS IFU and measured the spatially-resolved kinematics of the [O III] and H β emission lines. We used the emission lines to trace the ionised gas kinematics in the host galaxies of our targets. The main results are:

- We find spatially-extended [O III] emission-line regions over the full-field-of-view of our IFU observations. This corresponds to total spatial extents of $\geq 10\text{--}20 \text{ kpc}$. We observe a range of morphologies in the emission-line regions, including circular, elliptical and irregular morphologies. The targets that were classified as “radio excess” showed the highest incidence of irregular emission-line regions which may indicate a connection between radio emission and the ionised gas (see Sect. 4.5.1).
- We were able to identify a range of features associated with galaxy kinematics in our IFU data using the narrow emission-line profiles. These are galactic rotation, merging systems, merger debris and double nuclei. We isolated these kinematic components from any kinematics due to outflowing gas (see Sect. 4.5.2).
- We observed the key observational signatures of galaxy-wide high-velocity ionised outflows in all of our targets. That is, the emission lines had velocity widths of $W_{80} \approx 600\text{--}1500 \text{ km s}^{-1}$ extended over $\gtrsim (6\text{--}16) \text{ kpc}$ in all cases. By using our knowledge of the parent population, from which our targets were selected, we concluded that, $\geq 70\%$ (3σ confidence level) of the outflow features observed in the [O III] emission-line profiles of $z < 0.2$ luminous type 2 AGN are extended on kiloparsec scales (see Sect. 4.5.2).
- To investigate the potential impact of the observed outflows we compared the outflow velocities with the galaxy escape velocities. We found that the bulk outflow velocities across the sample are $v_{\text{out}} \approx 510\text{--}1100 \text{ km s}^{-1}$. These are comparable to the escape velocities of the host galaxies and indicate that some of this gas may be

able to escape the host galaxy potentials. The *maximum* projected gas velocities reach up to $v_{02} \approx 1700 \text{ km s}^{-1}$ (see Sect. 4.5.2) and any of the gas travelling at these velocities will be able to escape the host galaxy potential. However, it is not clear if the gas will be able to permanently escape their host galaxy halos, without some other process preventing the gas from returning at a later time (see Sect. 4.6.2).

- We observe a range of kinematic structures in the outflows including signatures of spherical outflows and bi-polar superbubbles. In several cases the outflows are preferentially oriented along the minor axis of the host galaxy, which is consistent with the idea that outflows escape along the path of least resistance (see Sects. 4.5.2 and 4.6.1).
- We observe no obvious relationships between the outflow kinematic structures and the AGN luminosities or SFRs. However, we do find that all of our three superbubble candidates are radio excess sources which may indicate that the radio emission in these structures is associated with a specific mechanism for driving outflows (see Sects. 4.5.2 and 4.6.1).
- Based on energetic arguments, we find that both star formation and AGN activity may contribute to driving the outflows that we have observed in the overall population (see Sect. 4.6.1).
- By combining our observations with those from the literature, we show that kiloparsec-scale ionised outflows are not confined to the most luminous AGN, extreme star-forming galaxies or radio-loud AGN. This is a crucial observation to show that *all* massive galaxies may go through these periods of energetic outflows, as many theoretical models predict. However, we find that the most extreme ionised gas velocities (with maximum velocities: $v_{02} \gtrsim 2000 \text{ km s}^{-1}$ and line-widths $W_{80} \gtrsim 1500 \text{ km s}^{-1}$) are preferentially found in quasar-ULIRG composite galaxies (see Sect. 4.6.1).
- Although based on simplifying assumptions, we estimate kinetic energy outflow rates ($\dot{E}_{\text{out}} \approx (0.15\text{--}45) \times 10^{44} \text{ erg s}^{-1}$) and mass outflow rates (typical $\approx 10 \times$ the SFRs) that imply that considerable mass and energy are being carried in the observed outflows (see Sect. 4.5.3). We find that the mass outflow rates, the outflow kinetic energy rates ($\approx 0.5\text{--}10\%$ of L_{AGN}) and the outflow momentum rates (typically $\gtrsim 10\text{--}20 \times L_{\text{AGN}}/c$) are in broad agreement with theoretical predictions of AGN-driven outflows that are postulated to play a significant role in shaping the evolution of galaxies (see Sect. 4.6.2).

By selecting targets for detailed observations from our well constrained parent sample we have been able to place our observations into the context of the overall AGN population. We have established that galaxy-wide ionised outflows are prevalent in AGN.

References

- Abazajian, K. N., Adelman-McCarthy, J. K., Agüeros, M. A., et al. 2009, *APJS*, 182, 543
- Allington-Smith, J., Murray, G., Content, R., et al. 2002, *PASP*, 114, 892
- Antonucci, R. 1993, *ARAA*, 31, 473
- Baldwin, J. A., Carswell, R. F., Wampler, E. J., et al. 1980, *ApJ*, 236, 388
- Baldwin, J. A., Phillips, M. M., & Terlevich, R. 1981, *PASP*, 93, 5
- Barbosa, F. K. B., Storchi-Bergmann, T., Cid Fernandes, R., Winge, C., & Schmitt, H. 2009, *MNRAS*, 396, 2
- Barth, A. J., Greene, J. E., & Ho, L. C. 2008, *AJ*, 136, 1179
- Becker, R. H., White, R. L., & Helfand, D. J. 1995, *ApJ*, 450, 559
- Bennert, N., Falcke, H., Schulz, H., Wilson, A. S., & Wills, B. J. 2002, *ApJL*, 574, L105
- Booth, C. M., & Schaye, J. 2010, *MNRAS*, 405, L1
- Bower, R. G., Benson, A. J., & Crain, R. A. 2012, *MNRAS*, 422, 2816
- Bradshaw, E. J., Almaini, O., Hartley, W. G., et al. 2013, *MNRAS*, 433, 194
- Calzetti, D., Armus, L., Bohlin, R. C., et al. 2000, *ApJ*, 533, 682
- Capetti, A., Axon, D. J., Macchetto, F. D., Marconi, A., & Winge, C. 1999, *Mem. Soc. Astron. Italiana*, 70, 41
- Cavagnolo, K. W., McNamara, B. R., Nulsen, P. E. J., et al. 2010, *ApJ*, 720, 1066
- Cecil, G., Bland-Hawthorn, J., Veilleux, S., & Filippenko, A. V. 2001, *ApJ*, 555, 338
- Chen, C.-T. J., Hickox, R. C., Alberts, S., et al. 2013, *ApJ*, 773, 3
- Churazov, E., Sazonov, S., Sunyaev, R., et al. 2005, *MNRAS*, 363, L91
- Cicone, C., Maiolino, R., Sturm, E., et al. 2014, *A&A*, 562, A21
- Cisternas, M., Jahnke, K., Inskip, K. J., et al. 2011, *ApJ*, 726, 57
- Comerford, J. M., Gerke, B. F., Stern, D., et al. 2012, *ApJ*, 753, 42
- Comerford, J. M., Schluns, K., Greene, J. E., & Cool, R. J. 2013, *ApJ*, 777, 64
- Condon, J. J., Anderson, E., & Broderick, J. J. 1995, *AJ*, 109, 2318
- Condon, J. J., Cotton, W. D., Greisen, E. W., et al. 1998, *AJ*, 115, 1693
- Condon, J. J., Kellermann, K. I., Kimball, A. E., Ivezić, Ž., & Perley, R. A. 2013, *ApJ*, 768, 37
- Courteau, S. 1997, *AJ*, 114, 2402
- Crenshaw, D. M., & Kraemer, S. B. 2000, *ApJL*, 532, L101
- Crenshaw, D. M., Schmitt, H. R., Kraemer, S. B., Mushotzky, R. F., & Dunn, J. P. 2010, *ApJ*, 708, 419
- Dalla Vecchia, C., & Schaye, J. 2008, *MNRAS*, 387, 1431
- Debuhr, J., Quataert, E., & Ma, C.-P. 2012, *MNRAS*, 420, 2221
- Del Moro, A., Alexander, D. M., Mullaney, J. R., et al. 2013, *A&A*, 549, A59
- Di Matteo, T., Springel, V., & Hernquist, L. 2005, *Nature*, 433, 604
- Diamond-Stanic, A. M., Moustakas, J., Tremonti, C. A., et al. 2012, *ApJL*, 755, L26
- Dimitrijević, M. S., Popović, L. Č., Kovačević, J., Dačić, M., & Ilić, D. 2007, *MNRAS*, 374, 1181
- Emonts, B. H. C., Morganti, R., Tadhunter, C. N., et al. 2005, *MNRAS*, 362, 931
- Faucher-Giguère, C.-A., & Quataert, E. 2012, *MNRAS*, 425, 605
- Fischer, T. C., Crenshaw, D. M., Kraemer, S. B., & Schmitt, H. R. 2013, *APJS*, 209, 1
- Fischer, T. C., Crenshaw, D. M., Kraemer, S. B., et al. 2011, *ApJ*, 727, 71
- Förster Schreiber, N. M., Genzel, R., Newman, S. F., et al. 2014, *ApJ*, 787, 38
- Fu, H., Myers, A. D., Djorgovski, S. G., & Yan, L. 2011, *ApJ*, 733, 103
- Fu, H., & Stockton, A. 2009, *ApJ*, 690, 953
- Fu, H., Yan, L., Myers, A. D., et al. 2012, *ApJ*, 745, 67
- Gabor, J. M., & Bournaud, F. 2014, *MNRAS*, 441, 1615
- Gabor, J. M., Davé, R., Oppenheimer, B. D., & Finlator, K. 2011, *MNRAS*, 417, 2676
- Ge, J.-Q., Hu, C., Wang, J.-M., Bai, J.-M., & Zhang, S. 2012, *APJS*, 201, 31
- Gelderman, R., & Whittle, M. 1994, *APJS*, 91, 491
- Genzel, R., Newman, S., Jones, T., et al. 2011, *ApJ*, 733, 101
- Greene, J. E., & Ho, L. C. 2005, *ApJ*, 627, 721

- Greene, J. E., Zakamska, N. L., Ho, L. C., & Barth, A. J. 2011, *ApJ*, 732, 9
- Greene, J. E., Zakamska, N. L., & Smith, P. S. 2012, *ApJ*, 746, 86
- Hainline, K. N., Hickox, R., Greene, J. E., Myers, A. D., & Zakamska, N. L. 2013, *ApJ*, 774, 145
- Harrison, C. M., Alexander, D. M., Mullaney, J. R., & Swinbank, A. M. 2014, *MNRAS*, 441, 3306
- Harrison, C. M., Alexander, D. M., Swinbank, A. M., et al. 2012, *MNRAS*, 426, 1073
- Heckman, T. M., Armus, L., & Miley, G. K. 1987, *AJ*, 93, 276
- Heckman, T. M., Armus, L., & Miley, G. K. 1990, *APJS*, 74, 833
- Heckman, T. M., Kauffmann, G., Brinchmann, J., et al. 2004, *ApJ*, 613, 109
- Heckman, T. M., Lehnert, M. D., Strickland, D. K., & Armus, L. 2000, *APJS*, 129, 493
- Heckman, T. M., Miley, G. K., van Breugel, W. J. M., & Butcher, H. R. 1981, *ApJ*, 247, 403
- Heckman, T. M., Borthakur, S., Overzier, R., et al. 2011, *ApJ*, 730, 5
- Helou, G., Soifer, B. T., & Rowan-Robinson, M. 1985, *ApJL*, 298, L7
- Hill, M. J., & Zakamska, N. L. 2014, *MNRAS*, 439, 2701
- Holt, J., Tadhunter, C., Morganti, R., et al. 2006, *MNRAS*, 370, 1633
- Holt, J., Tadhunter, C. N., & Morganti, R. 2008, *MNRAS*, 387, 639
- Hopkins, P. F., Cox, T. J., Hernquist, L., et al. 2013a, *MNRAS*, 430, 1901
- Hopkins, P. F., & Elvis, M. 2010, *MNRAS*, 401, 7
- Hopkins, P. F., Hernquist, L., Cox, T. J., & Kereš, D. 2008, *APJS*, 175, 356
- Hopkins, P. F., Kereš, D., Murray, N., et al. 2013b, *MNRAS*, 433, 78
- Humphrey, A., Villar-Martín, M., Sánchez, S. F., et al. 2010, *MNRAS*, 408, L1
- Husemann, B., Wisotzki, L., Sánchez, S. F., & Jahnke, K. 2013, *A&A*, 549, A43
- Iverson, R. J., Magnelli, B., Ibar, E., et al. 2010, *A&A*, 518, L31
- Kennicutt, Jr., R. C. 1998, *ARAA*, 36, 189
- Kim, M., Ho, L. C., Lonsdale, C. J., et al. 2013, *ApJL*, 768, L9
- Kimball, A. E., & Ivezić, Ž. 2008, *AJ*, 136, 684
- King, A. R., Zubovas, K., & Power, C. 2011, *MNRAS*, 415, L6
- Krajinović, D., Cappellari, M., de Zeeuw, P. T., & Copin, Y. 2006, *MNRAS*, 366, 787
- Lagos, C. D. P., Cora, S. A., & Padilla, N. D. 2008, *MNRAS*, 388, 587
- Lawrence, A., & Elvis, M. 2010, *ApJ*, 714, 561
- Leipski, C., & Bennert, N. 2006, *A&A*, 448, 165
- Leitherer, C., Schaerer, D., Goldader, J. D., et al. 1999, *APJS*, 123, 3
- Liu, G., Zakamska, N. L., & Greene, J. E. 2014, *MNRAS*, 442, 1303
- Liu, G., Zakamska, N. L., Greene, J. E., Nesvadba, N. P. H., & Liu, X. 2013a, *MNRAS*, 430, 2327
- Liu, G., Zakamska, N. L., Greene, J. E., Nesvadba, N. P. H., & Liu, X. 2013b, *MNRAS*, 436, 2576
- Liu, X., Shen, Y., Strauss, M. A., & Greene, J. E. 2010, *ApJ*, 708, 427
- Mahony, E. K., Morganti, R., Emonts, B. H. C., Oosterloo, T. A., & Tadhunter, C. 2013, *MNRAS*, 435, L58
- Markwardt, C. B. 2009, in *Astronomical Society of the Pacific Conference Series*, Vol. 411, *Astronomical Data Analysis Software and Systems XVIII*, ed. D. A. Bohlender, D. Durand, & P. Dowler, 251
- Martin, C. L. 1999, *ApJ*, 513, 156
- Martin, C. L. 2005, *ApJ*, 621, 227
- McCarthy, I. G., Schaye, J., Bower, R. G., et al. 2011, *MNRAS*, 412, 1965
- Morganti, R., Frieswijk, W., Oonk, R. J. B., Oosterloo, T., & Tadhunter, C. 2013, *A&A*, 552, L4
- Morganti, R., Oosterloo, T. A., Tadhunter, C. N., van Moorsel, G., & Emonts, B. 2005, *A&A*, 439, 521
- Moshir, M., Kopman, G., & Conrow, T. A. O. 1992, *IRAS Faint Source Survey*, Explanatory supplement version 2
- Mullaney, J. R., Alexander, D. M., Fine, S., et al. 2013, *MNRAS*, 433, 622
- Mullaney, J. R., Alexander, D. M., Huynh, M., Goulding, A. D., & Frayer, D. 2010, *MNRAS*, 401, 995
- Mullaney, J. R., Daddi, E., Béthermin, M., et al. 2012, *ApJL*, 753, L30
- Murray, N., Ménard, B., & Thompson, T. A. 2011, *ApJ*, 735, 66

- Murray, N., Quataert, E., & Thompson, T. A. 2005, *ApJ*, 618, 569
- Navarro, J. F., Frenk, C. S., & White, S. D. M. 1996, *ApJ*, 462, 563
- Nelson, C. H., & Whittle, M. 1996, *ApJ*, 465, 96
- Nesvadba, N. P. H., Lehnert, M. D., De Breuck, C., Gilbert, A. M., & van Breugel, W. 2008, *A&A*, 491, 407
- Nesvadba, N. P. H., Lehnert, M. D., Eisenhauer, F., et al. 2006, *ApJ*, 650, 693
- Nesvadba, N. P. H., Polletta, M., Lehnert, M. D., et al. 2011, *MNRAS*, 415, 2359
- Neugebauer, G., Habing, H. J., van Duinen, R., et al. 1984, *ApJL*, 278, L1
- Newman, S. F., Genzel, R., Förster-Schreiber, N. M., et al. 2012, *ApJ*, 761, 43
- Ohyama, Y., Taniguchi, Y., Iye, M., et al. 2002, *PASJ*, 54, 891
- Ramos Almeida, C., Tadhunter, C. N., Inskip, K. J., et al. 2011, *MNRAS*, 410, 1550
- Reyes, R., Zakamska, N. L., Strauss, M. A., et al. 2008, *AJ*, 136, 2373
- Riffel, R. A., Storchi-Bergmann, T., & Riffel, R. 2014, *ApJL*, 780, L24
- Rodríguez Zaurín, J., Tadhunter, C. N., Rose, M., & Holt, J. 2013, *MNRAS*, 432, 138
- Rosario, D. J., Santini, P., Lutz, D., et al. 2012, *A&A*, 545, A45
- Rosas-Guevara, Y. M., Bower, R. G., Schaye, J., et al. 2015, *MNRAS*, 454, 1038
- Rupke, D. S., Veilleux, S., & Sanders, D. B. 2005, *APJS*, 160, 115
- Rupke, D. S. N., & Veilleux, S. 2011, *ApJL*, 729, L27+
- Rupke, D. S. N., & Veilleux, S. 2013, *ApJ*, 768, 75
- Sanders, D. B., & Mirabel, I. F. 1996, *ARAA*, 34, 749
- Sanders, D. B., Soifer, B. T., Elias, J. H., Neugebauer, G., & Matthews, K. 1988, *ApJL*, 328, L35
- Schirmer, M., Diaz, R., Holmberg, K., Levenson, N. A., & Winge, C. 2013, *ApJ*, 763, 60
- Shih, H.-Y., & Rupke, D. S. N. 2010, *ApJ*, 724, 1430
- Shih, H.-Y., Stockton, A., & Kewley, L. 2013, *ApJ*, 772, 138
- Silk, J., & Rees, M. J. 1998, *A&A*, 331, L1
- Simpson, C., Rawlings, S., Ivison, R., et al. 2012, *MNRAS*, 421, 3060
- Smith, K. L., Shields, G. A., Bonning, E. W., et al. 2010, *ApJ*, 716, 866
- Soto, K. T., & Martin, C. L. 2010, *ApJ*, 716, 332
- Storchi-Bergmann, T., Lopes, R. D. S., McGregor, P. J., et al. 2010, *MNRAS*, 402, 819
- Sutherland, R. S., & Bicknell, G. V. 2007, *APJS*, 173, 37
- Tadhunter, C. N., Morganti, R., Robinson, A., et al. 1998, *MNRAS*, 298, 1035
- Veilleux, S. 1991, *APJS*, 75, 383
- Veilleux, S., Cecil, G., & Bland-Hawthorn, J. 2005, *ARAA*, 43, 769
- Veilleux, S., Cecil, G., Bland-Hawthorn, J., et al. 1994, *ApJ*, 433, 48
- Veilleux, S., Kim, D.-C., Sanders, D. B., Mazzarella, J. M., & Soifer, B. T. 1995, *APJS*, 98, 171
- Veilleux, S., Rupke, D. S. N., Kim, D.-C., et al. 2009, *APJS*, 182, 628
- Veilleux, S., Meléndez, M., Sturm, E., et al. 2013, *ApJ*, 776, 27
- Villar-Martín, M., Cabrera Lavers, A., Bessiere, P., et al. 2012, *MNRAS*, 423, 80
- Villar-Martín, M., Fosbury, R. A. E., Binette, L., Tadhunter, C. N., & Rocca-Volmerange, B. 1999, *A&A*, 351, 47
- Villar-Martín, M., Humphrey, A., Delgado, R. G., Colina, L., & Arribas, S. 2011a, *MNRAS*, 418, 2032
- Villar-Martín, M., Tadhunter, C., Humphrey, A., et al. 2011b, *MNRAS*, 416, 262
- Vrtilek, J. M. 1985, *ApJ*, 294, 121
- Wagner, A. Y., Bicknell, G. V., & Umemura, M. 2012, *ApJ*, 757, 136
- Wang, J.-M., Chen, Y.-M., Hu, C., et al. 2009, *ApJL*, 705, L76
- Wang, L., Rowan-Robinson, M., Norberg, P., Heinis, S., & Han, J. 2014, *MNRAS*, 442, 2739
- Westmoquette, M. S., Clements, D. L., Bendo, G. J., & Khan, S. A. 2012, *MNRAS*, 424, 416
- Whittle, M. 1985, *MNRAS*, 213, 1
- Whittle, M. 1992, *ApJ*, 387, 109
- Whittle, M., Pedlar, A., Meurs, E. J. A., et al. 1988, *ApJ*, 326, 125
- Whittle, M., & Wilson, A. S. 2004, *AJ*, 127, 606
- Wright, E. L., Eisenhardt, P. R. M., Mainzer, A. K., et al. 2010, *AJ*, 140, 1868

- Xu, C., Livio, M., & Baum, S. 1999, *AJ*, 118, 1169
- Zakamska, N. L., Gómez, L., Strauss, M. A., & Krolik, J. H. 2008, *AJ*, 136, 1607
- Zakamska, N. L., & Greene, J. E. 2014, *MNRAS*, 442, 784
- Zakamska, N. L., Strauss, M. A., Heckman, T. M., Ivezić, Ž., & Krolik, J. H. 2004, *AJ*, 128, 1002
- Zubovas, K., & King, A. 2012, *ApJL*, 745, L34

Chapter 5

Storm in a “Teacup”: A Radio-Quiet Quasar with ≈ 10 kpc Radio-Emitting Bubbles and Extreme Gas Kinematics

Abstract In this chapter we aim to address the question: what is the physical connection between the radio emission and ionised gas kinematics in radio-quiet quasars? In this pilot study, we present VLA radio and VIMOS IFU observations of the radio-quiet, type 2 quasar that has been nicknamed the “Teacup AGN” due to its emission-line region morphology. In the central ≈ 1 kpc we observe a high-velocity ionised outflow that is co-spatial with a radio structure. This is likely to be a radio jet driving the outflow or a quasar wind that is shocking the ISM at this position. We observe ≈ 10 – 12 kpc radio bubbles each side of the nucleus, the larger of which is associated with an arc of luminous ionised gas, which appear to be inflated by the central AGN. These observations show that the AGN is interacting with the interstellar medium across multiple scales. Furthermore, there appears to be a large amount of mechanical energy input from this AGN, despite it being formally “radio quiet”. Our study highlights that even when a quasar is formally “radio-quiet” the radio emission can be extremely effective for observing the effects of AGN feedback.

5.1 Motivation

In Chap. 4 of this thesis we presented IFU observations of a sample of 16 radio-quiet luminous AGN. We observed kiloparsec ionised outflows across the sample indicating large-scale feedback processes are occurring in representative luminous AGN. One of the results from this study was tentative evidence for a connection between the emission-line region morphologies and the level of radio emission in the host galaxies. Furthermore, previous work had shown there was a connection between the prevalence of ionised outflows and the radio luminosity of such systems (Mullaney et al. 2013; see Sect. 4.2). These initial results provide evidence for a fundamental connection between the production of radio emission and the ionised gas kinematics in the host galaxies of luminous AGN. However, it was not possible to determine the physical origin of the connection between ionised gas kinematics and radio emission from these studies. Therefore, the logical next step was to spatially resolve both the radio emission and the ionised gas kinematics in these objects to search for the physical origin of these results. In this Chapter we present a combined

study of the radio emission and ionised gas kinematics for one of the object where an ionised outflow was identified in Chap. 4. This serves a pilot study for a future equivalent study on all of the objects presented in Chap. 4. The scientific results of the work presented in this chapter have been published in Harrison et al. (2015); however, a large fraction of the text presented here has been written exclusively for this thesis, including an extended introduction.

5.2 Introduction

One of the outstanding questions of observational astronomy is how do AGN inject energy into the gas residing in their host galaxies and beyond. This energy injection is a fundamental prediction of galaxy formation models and observations are now beginning to show that some energy injection is occurring (see Sect. 1.5; Chaps. 4 and 3). However, exactly how the energy is transferred from the AGN to the host galaxies is under debate.

Semi-analytical simulations of galaxy formation often refer to “radio mode” (aka “hot-halo mode”) or “quasar mode” of feedback (see e.g., Bower et al. 2012; see Sect. 1.5.1). In this radio mode, the gas in hydrostatic halos is prevented from cooling by the input of mechanical work (e.g., Bower et al. 2006). Indeed, by combining radio and X-ray observations, there is convincing evidence that mechanically dominated (or “radio-loud”) AGN are regulating cooling in massive galaxies, groups and clusters by launching radio jets (see McNamara and Nulsen 2012). This energy input is capable of regulating future star formation and AGN accretion, in agreement with model predictions. However, these radio-loud AGN represent the minority of the overall AGN population (e.g., Alexander and Hickox 2012) and therefore it is not clear how universal this radio mode of feedback is. In contrast, during the so-called *quasar mode*, high-accretion rate AGN are thought to reduce star formation by directly impacting upon the cold gas, for example, by photo-ionization or by driving outflows of material out of the host-galaxy potential (e.g., Hopkins et al. 2006). While these effects may be more common than the radio mode, there are contradictory theoretical results on how this quasar mode works, and crucially, whether it has any long-term impact upon the evolution of the galaxy (e.g., Bower et al. 2012; Zubovas and King 2012; Gabor and Bournaud 2014).

From an observational point of view, while AGN undergoing “quasar” phases (i.e., those likely to be undergoing “quasar mode” feedback) are seen to host galaxy-wide outflows (e.g., see Chaps. 3 and 4); however, the driving mechanisms and long-term impact of these outflows is poorly constrained. In particular, there is a debate to whether the outflows observed are driven by: (1) stellar winds and supernovae; (2) accretion disk winds that propagate into the ISM; or (3) radio jets that collide with the ISM on large scales. Towards addressing this outstanding issue, Mullaney et al. (2013) showed that ionised outflows are more prevalent in $z < 0.4$ AGN with moderate-to-high radio luminosities (i.e., $L_{1.4 \text{ GHz}} \gtrsim 10^{24} \text{ W Hz}^{-1}$) using a study of $\approx 24,000$ AGN. Zakamska and Greene (2014) observed a similar result for 568 $z < 0.8$ type 2

quasars and this is also consistent with the results of several other studies with smaller samples of AGN (e.g., Heckman et al. 1981; Wilson and Heckman 1985; Veilleux 1991; Nelson and Whittle 1996). Therefore, understanding the radio emission in these more typical systems may be the key to determining how AGN inject energy into their host galaxies.

While a connection between the radio luminosity and ionised outflows may have been established, the physical origin of this connection is not resolved. For example, this effect is seen in sources with moderate radio luminosities or those classified as “radio quiet” (e.g., Xu et al. 1999; Zakamska et al. 2004) and for these systems there are many possible processes that could be producing the radio emission. These are: (1) star formation (e.g., Condon et al. 2013); (2) radio jets (e.g., Ulvestad et al. 2005); (3) nuclear coronal activity (e.g., Laor and Behar 2008) and (4) shocks produced by quasars winds colliding with the ISM (e.g., Zakamska and Greene 2014; Nims et al. 2015). Therefore, to understand what is driving the connection between radio emission and ionised outflows in AGN we are required to combine detailed spatially-resolved radio observations with spatially-resolved ionised gas kinematics (i.e., IFU observations). Such observations provide a more direct method for determining the physical origin of the radio emission and how it is connected to any outflows observed.

In this pilot study, we combine high-resolution radio imaging and spatially-resolved spectroscopy for one radio-quiet type 2 quasar, J1430+1339, nicknamed the “Teacup AGN” to the appearance of its emission-line region in SDSS imaging (Keel et al. 2012). This source has a redshift of $z = 0.085$ and is drawn from the sample of $z < 0.2$ radio-quiet quasars presented in Chap. 4, for which we have already identified an $v \approx -800 \text{ km s}^{-1}$ ionised outflow $\approx 1 \text{ kpc}$ from the nucleus using IFU data. SDSS imaging, *HST* imaging and longslit observations have also revealed that this source has an arc of ionised gas $\approx 10 \text{ kpc}$ from the nucleus (Keel et al. 2012, 2015; Gagne et al. 2014). Our previous IFU observations did not cover this arc, due to a limited field of view; however, our new observations presented here cover the whole emission-line region. The star formation rate of this system is $\approx 7 M_{\odot} \text{ yr}^{-1}$, which is typical for quasars at this redshift (Sect. 4.3.3). This source has a bolometric AGN luminosity that classifies it as a quasar (i.e., $L_{\text{AGN}} = 2 \times 10^{45} \text{ erg s}^{-1}$) and a radio luminosity that classifies it as radio quiet (i.e., $L_{1.4 \text{ GHz}} = 5 \times 10^{24} \text{ W Hz}^{-1}$; see Sect. 4.3.1 for details). However, it is defined as “radio excess” due to the extra radio emission above that expected to be produced by star formation alone, indicating that some other processes are also producing the radio emission in this source. Quantitatively, it lies 10 times above the radio-far-infrared correlation and has an radio excess parameter of $q_{\text{IR}} = 1.8$ (following e.g., Helou et al. 1985; Ivison et al 2010).

In Sect. 5.3, we present the details of our Very Large Array (VLA) radio observations and Visible MultiObject Spectrograph (VIMOS) observations. In Sect. 5.4 we present our results and discuss their implications and in Sect. 5.5 we give our conclusions. We have adopted $H_0 = 71 \text{ km s}^{-1} \text{ Mpc}^{-1}$, $\Omega_{\text{M}} = 0.27$ and $\Omega_{\Lambda} = 0.73$ throughout. We relate flux density, S_{ν} , frequency, ν , and radio spectral index, α , in the form $S_{\nu} \propto \nu^{\alpha}$. Images are displayed with north up and east left and positional angles (PAs) are given east of north.

5.3 Data Acquisition, Reduction and Analysis

In this chapter we combine radio imaging data with IFU data and *HST* imaging of the Teacup AGN. In this section we give details of the data acquisition, reduction and analyses performed on each data set.

5.3.1 VLA Radio Data

Observations

The Teacup AGN was observed using the VLA in the following four configuration/frequency settings under observation ID 13B-127:

1. High resolution (A-configuration) at 1–2 GHz (i.e., *L*-band)
2. High resolution (A-configuration) at 4–8 GHz (i.e., *C*-band)
3. Medium resolution (B-configuration) at 1–2 GHz (i.e., *L*-band)
4. Medium resolution (B-configuration) at 4–8 GHz (i.e., *C*-band)

This combination of observations allows to construct matched spatial resolution maps at multiple frequencies (see below). Bandpass calibrators were taken at the beginning and end of each observing block and scans of the target were bracketed with observations of a phase calibrator. The raw visibilities of the VLA data were calibrated locally using Version 1.2.0 of the CASA VLA Calibration pipeline.

Radio Maps and Analysis

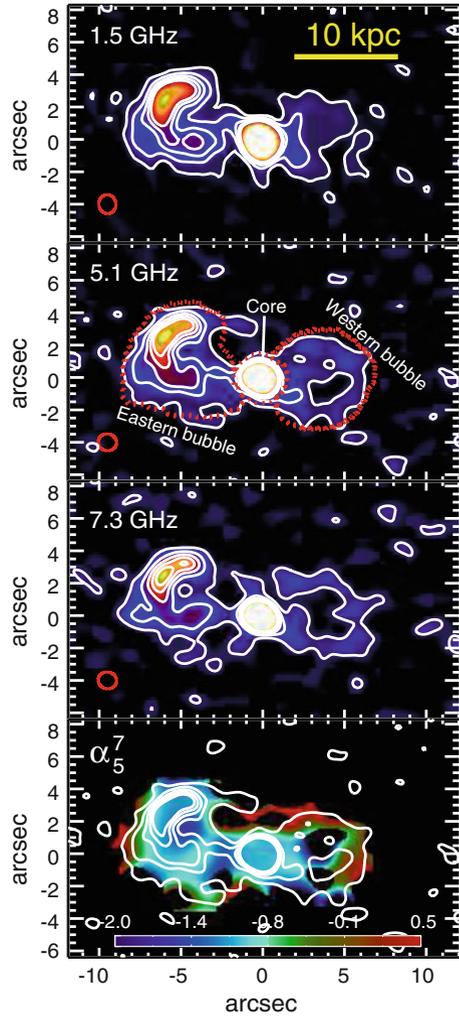
Using the raw VLA data sets described above we created a variety of images at different spatial resolutions (i.e., sizes of the synthesised beams) and central frequencies. These are summarised in Table 5.1 and we give details below.

Table 5.1 Properties of radio images

Obs. frequency (GHz)	Beam HPBW (arcsec)	Beam PA (°)	Noise (μ Jy)	Figure
1.52	1.17×1.04	−172	38	5.1
5.12	1.13×1.04	80	16	5.1
7.26	1.14×1.03	74	15	5.1
6.22	0.51×0.38	−61	10	5.3
6.22	0.37×0.24	−88	18	5.3a
5.12	0.50×0.30	87	28	—
7.26	0.36×0.21	86	27	—

Details of the various radio images produced for this work. The columns give the central frequencies, the synthesised beam sizes and PAs, the noise measurements and the figure numbers where each image can be found. In Sect. 5.3.1 we describe which sub-sets of the VLA data went into each map and how they were produced

Fig. 5.1 Our VLA data for the Teacup AGN at three different observed-frame frequencies (from *top-down*: 1.5; 5.1; 7.3 GHz), which have been matched to the same spatial resolution of ≈ 1 arcsec (see Sect. 5.3.1). The *bottom panel* shows a spectral index map using the full C-band data (α_5^7), where values are only shown for pixels with an uncertainty ≤ 0.25 . We observe three radio structures: (1) a bright eastern bubble; (2) a bright core and (3) a faint western bubble (see *dotted curves* in the second panel). The SED for each of these structure is shown in Fig. 5.2



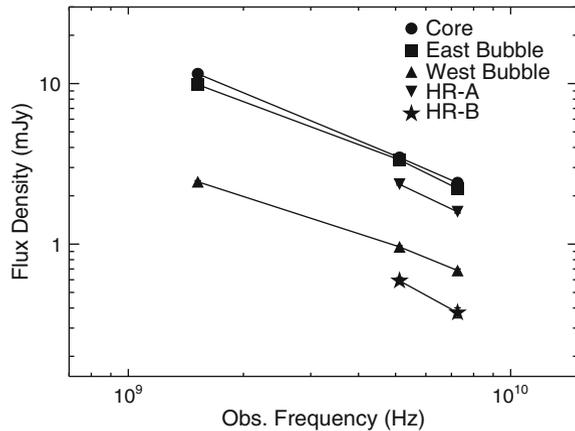
In Fig. 5.1, we show three images all with ≈ 1 arcsec synthesised beams centred at 1.5, 5.1 and 7.3 GHz. The first of these was created by using our L-band A-configuration data and mapping it with a ROBUST = 0.5 weighting scheme. The second and third images were created by weighting the combined C-band data sets with Gaussian tapers, with widths chosen to produced the required ≈ 1 arcsec synthesised beams. In Fig. 5.1, we also show a spectral index map (between 7 and 5 GHz, α_5^7) using the combined C-band datasets and the MSMFS imaging mode in CASA. In Fig. 5.1 three major radio structures can clearly be identified: (1) a bright eastern bubble; (2) a fainter western bubble and (3) a bright core. We measured the flux densities of these three structures at each of the three frequencies by integrating inside polygons around each structure (see dotted curves in Fig. 5.1). These flux densities

Table 5.2 Radio properties of selected structures

Structure	D	PA	$S_{1.5\text{ GHz}}$	$S_{5\text{ GHz}}$	$S_{7\text{ GHz}}$	$\alpha_{1.5}^5$	α_5^7	Variation in α
	(1)	(2)	(3)	(4)	(5)	(6)	(7)	(8)
<i>Matched resolution</i> (Fig. 5.1)								
Core	1.5[2]	0	11.49[4]	3.462[16]	2.410[15]	-0.988[5]	-1.04[2]	± 0.08
Eastern bubble	7.9[5]	66	9.85[4]	3.350[16]	2.219[15]	-0.888[5]	-1.18[2]	± 0.3
Western bubble	6.9[5]	-90	2.45[4]	0.961[16]	0.685[15]	-0.77[2]	-0.98[8]	± 0.6
<i>High resolution</i> (Fig. 5.3)								
HR-A	$\lesssim 0.4$	-	-	2.36[3]	1.59[3]	-	-1.13[6]	-
HR-B	$\lesssim 0.4$	-	-	0.59[3]	0.37[3]	-	-1.3[2]	-

The sizes, flux densities and spectral indices of the structures identified in the VLA data of the Teacup AGN (see Figs. 5.1 and 5.3). (1) The projected size of each structure (in arc seconds) based on the 5 GHz images, measured by taking a vector from the central core peak to the edge of each region (in the case of HR-A and HR-B we quote the HPBW); (2) The PA (in degrees) of the axis that the distances, D , were measured (for the eastern bubble this is in the direction to the brightest knot); (3)–(5) The observed-frame flux densities in mJy; (6) and (7) The spectral indices calculated from the quoted flux densities; (8) The scatter of the α values within the defined regions (see Fig. 5.1). In each column the number in square brackets gives the uncertainty on the last decimal place. We estimate an additional $\approx 5\%$ ($\approx 15\%$) uncertainty on the flux densities of the core and eastern bubble (western bubble) due to the uncertain definitions of the chosen regions (Fig. 5.1)

Fig. 5.2 The VLA data for each of the spatial structures identified in Figs. 5.1 and 5.3. These data are tabulated in Table 5.2. All of the features are dominated by steep spectral indices (i.e., $\alpha \approx -1$); however, there is some variation within individual regions (see Fig. 5.1). These spectral indices are consistent with radio emission that is produced by shocks or radio jets (see Sect. 5.4)



are tabulated in Table 5.2 and are plotted in the form of a spectral energy distribution (SED) in Fig. 5.2. We discuss the implications of the observed flux densities and spectral indices in Sect. 5.4.

To search for radio structures on smaller scales than those observed in Fig. 5.1 we exploited our combined C-band data, which is sensitive to scales as small as ≈ 0.3 arcsec. Using CASA we created an image using the combined data set with

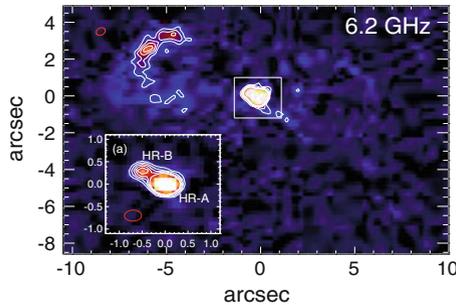


Fig. 5.3 Our high-resolution VLA data for the Teacup AGN at observed-frame 6.22 GHz. Some of the fainter extended emission has been resolved out due to the lack of sensitivity to large-scale structures in this image (see Fig. 5.1). The *inset* shows the highest resolution map, which is extracted from the which box in the main panel. These data reveal that the bright core observed in Fig. 5.1 consists of two separate structures: a bright central structure (HR-A) and a fainter structure (HR-B) ≈ 0.8 kpc to the north east (PA $\approx 60^\circ$). We investigate the relationship between these structures and the ionised gas kinematics in Fig. 5.4

ROBUST = 0.5 and show this map in Fig. 5.3. This map is centred at ≈ 6 GHz with ≈ 0.5 arcsec resolution. It can be seen that some of the emission associated with the bubbles, that was observed in the lower-resolution map, is resolved out in Fig. 5.3 due to a lack of sensitivity to large-scale structures. However, this images reveals that the bright core is not a point source, but instead is extended at a PA of $\approx 60^\circ$ towards to eastern bubble. To investigate this further we created an even higher resolution map by using only the A-configuration data and super-uniform weighting in CASA. This images is shown as an inset in Fig. 5.3. This image as a resolution of ≈ 0.3 arcsec. It can clearly be seen that the core emission breaks down into two separate radio structures. There is a brighter structure, which we have labelled HR-A, and a fainter structure ≈ 0.5 arcsec (or ≈ 0.8 kpc) to the north-east, which we have labelled HR-B. The flux densities of these structures are provided in Table 5.2. These two structure appear to be point sources at this resolution and contain the majority of the flux observed in the bright core shown in Fig. 5.1; however, ≈ 0.5 mJy appears to be resolved out (see Table 5.2), implying some additional diffuse emission that may exist inside the core that is not part of these dominant structures.

5.3.2 VIMOS IFU Data

Observations and Data Reduction

The Teacup AGN was observed with VIMOS in IFU mode on the VLT under the Programme ID: 092.B-0062. The observations made use of the 0.67 arcsec fibre and the HR-Orange grism (see Sect. 2.1.3 for details). This provided a field-of-view of 27×27 arcsec, which is sufficient to observe the whole emission-line region

previously imaged for this source (Keel et al. 2015) and a wavelength range that covers our primary emission-line target of $[\text{O III}]\lambda 5007$. The total on-source exposure time was 4860 s. Standard star observations were also obtained to be used for flux calibration. The data were reduced using the standard ESOREX pipeline, along with dedicated IDL routines to perform the steps of data reduction, as described in Sect. 2.1.4.

Emission-Line Profiles and Fitting

We are interested in the connection between the ionised gas kinematics and production of radio emission. Therefore, we extract spectra, from the IFU data, in the spatial regions of the interesting radio structures identified in Figs. 5.1 and 5.3; that is, the eastern bubble, the western bubble and the HR-B component. We concentrate on the $[\text{O III}]$ emission-line profile as a tracer of the ionised gas kinematics. The $[\text{O III}]$ emission-line profiles are shown in Fig. 5.4. Below, we describe how we characterise these emission-line profiles and we summarise this information in Table 5.3.

Following the analyses described in Sect. 4.4.2 we initially, we fit each $[\text{O III}]$ emission-line profile using a combination of Gaussian components. This provides

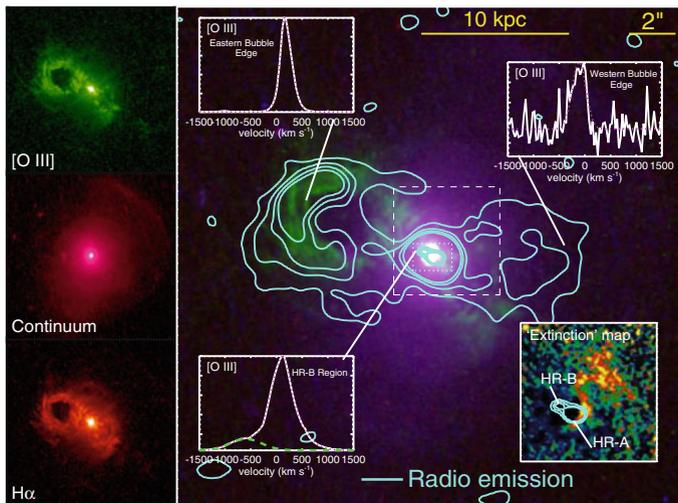


Fig. 5.4 *HST* images for the Teacup AGN showing both the ionised gas and the star-light in continuum (Sect. 5.3.3). *Top left* Narrow-band image centered on $[\text{O III}]\lambda 5007$. *Middle left* Line-free continuum image. *Bottom left* Narrow-band image centered on $\text{H}\alpha$. *Right* Composite image of the continuum image (shown in purple) and $[\text{O III}]$ emission (shown in green). The contours represent the radio emission from Figs. 5.1 and 5.3. The three inset $[\text{O III}]\lambda 5007$ emission-line profiles are from our VIMOS IFU data cubes, extracted from the specified regions (see Sect. 5.3.2). The highest-velocity kinematic component ($v = -740 \text{ km s}^{-1}$; see Sect. 5.4.1) is overlaid as a dashed green line on the “HR-B Region” emission-line profile and is co-spatially with the jet/wind radio structure. The inset on the bottom-right is extracted from the region indicated by the dashed white box shows the regions of dust in red/yellow colours (see Sect. 5.3.3). Overlaid as contours is the high-resolution 6.2 GHz radio data (see Fig. 5.3)

Table 5.3 [O III] emission-line profile properties from selected regions

Region	$(S/N)_{\text{peak}}$	v_p (km s ⁻¹)	W_{80} (km s ⁻¹)	A
HR-B region	640	147 ⁺¹¹ ₋₄₀	920 ⁺⁵⁰ ₋₁₂₀	-0.19 ^{+0.04} _{-0.15}
East bubble edge	805	150 ⁺⁷⁰ ₋₄₀	290 ⁺²⁰ ₋₅₀	0.14 ^{+0.02} _{-0.15}
West bubble edge	5	-110 ± 20	320 ± 70	0 ^(a)

Parameters of the [O III] emission-line profiles extracted from the IFU data in the regions of the major radio structures (see Figs. 5.1 and 5.4). The parameters are the peak signal-to-noise, peak velocity centroid, velocity-width and asymmetry (see Sect. 5.3.2)

^aAs only one Gaussian component is fit to the emission-line profile of the western bubble, $A = 0$ by default (see Sect. 5.3.2)

a model description of the overall emission-line profile shape (see dotted curves in Fig. 5.4). To account for the complexity in the [O III] emission-line profiles (see Fig. 5.4), we then use non-parametric definitions to define the central velocity, emission-line velocity width and asymmetry (see Table 5.3). This follows a very similar approach to the analyses performed on a larger sample of quasars in Chap. 4. The definitions we use in this work are:

- The peak signal-to-noise, $(S/N)_{\text{peak}}$, which is the signal-to-noise of the emission-line profile at the peak flux density.
- The “peak velocity”, v_p , which is the velocity of the emission-line profile at the peak flux density.
- The emission-line velocity width W_{80} , which is the width that contains 80 % of the emission-line flux.
- The asymmetry value, A , which is defined as

$$A = \frac{(\nu_{90} - \nu_{50}) - (\nu_{50} - \nu_{10})}{W_{80}}, \quad (5.3.1)$$

where ν_{10} , ν_{50} and ν_{90} are the velocities at the 10th, 50th and 90th percent of the cumulative flux, respectively. A very negative value of A means that the emission-line profile has a strong blue wing. $A = 0$ shows that the profile is symmetric.

Uncertainties on the parameters are calculated by fitting 10^4 mock spectra and calculating the 1σ distribution of parameters. The mock spectra were generated by adding random noise, at the level measured in the original spectra, to our best-fit models. These uncertainties are very small $\lesssim 10\%$. Therefore, it is more informative to provide the range of parameter values measured on the individual pixels *within* each region as the quoted uncertainties (see Table 5.3).

5.3.3 HST Imaging

The Teacup AGN has been observed with *HST* and the data is published in Keel et al. (2015). We show the data in Fig. 5.4. We show the narrow-band images around

the [O III] λ 5007 and H α + [N II] emission lines that were obtained on the Advance Camera for Surveys (ACS) instrument. We also make use of the two continuum (medium-band) images that were obtained using the F621M and F763M filters on the Wide-Field Camera 3 instrument. In Fig. 5.4 all images are shown on a logarithmic scale to bring out the low surface brightness features. A small astrometric correction was applied to align the images to align them to the SDSS position of the Teacup AGN and our IFU data. In the large panel of Fig. 5.4 we create a composite three-colour image, which red and blue are the two continuum images (resulting in a purple continuum colour) and green is the [O III] narrow-band image. The *HST* imaging has previously been used to show the presence of dust to the North-East of the nucleus (Keel et al. 2015). To demonstrate where the dust is located, we create a “pseudo-extinction” map by dividing the two continuum images. This is shown as an inset in Fig. 5.4 and reveals a colour-change (i.e., a region of high extinction) at the location of the dust identified by Keel et al. (2015) and also by Gagne et al. (2014) who use spatial variations of the H α /H β emission-line ratio.

5.4 Results and Discussion

We have presented a variety of data on the Teacup AGN, a $z = 0.085$ type 2 radio-quiet quasar. We presented VLA observations, covering 1–8 GHz (Figs. 5.1, 5.2 and 5.3), VIMOS IFU observations and *HST* imaging (Fig. 5.4). We observed a variety of interesting kinematic and morphological structures. In the following sub-sections we summarise the source structure and discuss possible interpretations of the observations. In Fig. 5.5 we show a schematic diagram to summarise the main observations of the Teacup AGN presented in this thesis.

5.4.1 Summary of Source Structure

Our VLA radio imaging of the Teacup AGN has revealed two steep spectrum ($\alpha \approx -1$) radio bubbles extending 10–12 kpc each side of a central steep-spectrum nucleus (see Fig. 5.1). The majority of the total radio emission (i.e., $\approx 90\%$) is shared approximately evenly between the core and radio bubbles, with roughly $\approx 10\%$ likely to be in an extended diffuse structure. The bubbles appear to be filled with low-surface brightness extended emission with brighter edges. The edge of the more luminous eastern bubble is spatially co-incident with an arc of luminous ionised gas that is visible in [O III] and H α emission (see Fig. 5.4). The ionised gas is much fainter at the location of the western bubble. The gas at the edge of the eastern bubble has a velocity offset of $v_p = 160 \text{ km s}^{-1}$ relative to the systemic and the gas at the edge of the western bubble has a velocity of $v_p = -110 \text{ km s}^{-1}$. These velocities appear to be de-coupled from the galactic rotation observed in this source (Harrison et al. 2015). We discuss the possible origin of the ≈ 10 –12 kpc radio bubbles and associated arc of ionised gas in Sect. 5.4.3.

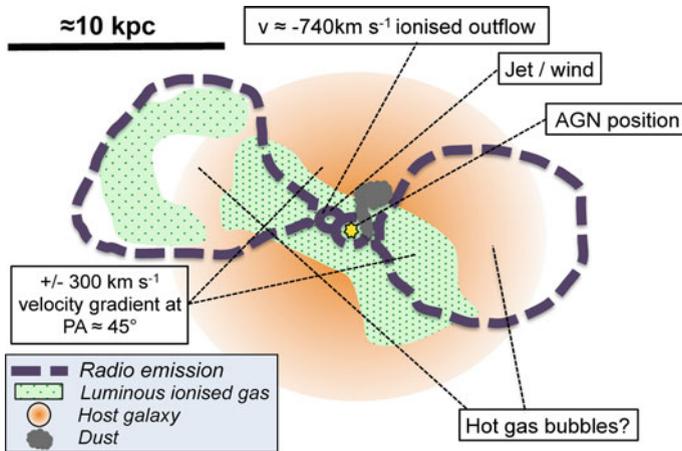


Fig. 5.5 A schematic diagram of the Teacup AGN to summarise the results of the data presented in this chapter (see Sect. 5.4.1). We have highlighted the region of luminous ionized gas with *dotted shading*; however, we note that low surface brightness ionized gas is found over a larger region. The 10–12 kpc scale bubbles are shown as *dashed curves*, and the small-scale radio structures in the central ≈ 1 kpc as circles. The AGN jet/wind structure is closely aligned with the radio bubbles, implying that this may be responsible for inflating the bright eastern bubble. All of the implied outflowing structures are directed away from the dusty region in the host galaxy

Our highest-resolution (Fig. 5.3) VLA imaging shows that the bright core is dominated by two compact structures, a bright central structure (“HR-A”) and a fainter structure ≈ 0.8 kpc to the north east (“HR-B”). Two intriguing points should be noted about the HR-B structure: (1) it is approximately along the same axis as the large eastern bubble (with respect to the central core) and (2) it is co-located with a high-velocity (blue-shifted) ionized gas component (see Fig. 5.4). This high-velocity kinematic component results in the highest observed line-widths of $W_{80} \approx 900 \text{ km s}^{-1}$ and the most negative asymmetry values (i.e., $A \lesssim -0.2$). This kinematic component, is therefore indicative of an ionized outflow in this region with a velocity of $v = -760 \text{ km s}^{-1}$ with respect to the $FWHM = 670 \text{ km s}^{-1}$. These values correspond to a maximum velocity of $v_{\text{max}} \approx 1100 \text{ km s}^{-1}$, using the commonly used definition of $v_{\text{max}} = |v| + \frac{1}{2}FWHM$ (e.g., Rupke et al. 2005a, b). In the following sub section we explore the possible origins of these structures and what drives their connection to the ionized gas kinematics.

5.4.2 What Powers the Core Radio Emission and Outflow?

In this subsection we discuss which processes may be producing the radio emission in the core of the Teacup AGN (see Fig. 5.3) and what is responsible for driving

the high-velocity ionised outflow associated with the “HR-B” radio structure (see Fig. 5.4).

5.4.2.1 Star Formation

Star formation is a possible candidate to produce both the radio emission in the core and also drive outflows via stellar winds and supernovae. The radio luminosity in the core of the Teacup AGN is $L_{1.4\text{GHz}} = 2 \times 10^{23} \text{ W Hz}^{-1}$, which is close to the proposed luminosity boundary between star-formation dominated and AGN-dominated radio emission in low redshift quasars (i.e., $L_{1.4\text{GHz}} \approx 3 \times 10^{23} \text{ W Hz}^{-1}$ for $0.2 < z < 0.3$; Kimball et al. 2011; Condon et al. 2013). The Teacup AGN has a FIR luminosity due to star formation of $L_{\text{IR,SF}} = 3 \times 10^{44} \text{ erg s}^{-1}$ (see Chap. 4). Assuming that the majority of this FIR emission is found in the central few kiloparsecs, the radio flux in the core region is a factor of ≈ 6 above the radio–FIR correlation of star forming galaxies (e.g., Helou et al. 1985; Ivison et al 2010), which would indicate that star formation does not dominate the radio emission in the core.

Another possibility to explore is whether the HR-B radio structure (Fig. 5.3) is associated with a compact star forming region that is responsible for driving the high-velocity gas we see co-located with this structure (with $v = -760 \text{ km s}^{-1}$ and $v_{\text{max}} \approx 1100 \text{ km s}^{-1}$; Fig. 5.4). Indeed, extremely compact star forming regions, with SFRs of $\approx 200 M_{\odot} \text{ yr}^{-1}$ and sizes $\approx 100 \text{ pc}$, have been attributed to driving $\approx 1000 \text{ km s}^{-1}$ outflows (Heckman et al. 2011; Diamond-Stanic et al. 2012; Sell et al. 2014). However, maximum velocities as high as that observed around the HR-B radio structure (i.e., $v_{\text{max}} \approx 1100 \text{ km s}^{-1}$) are not seen in non-AGN host galaxies with SFRs comparable to that of the Teacup AGN (i.e., SFRs $\approx 10 M_{\odot} \text{ yr}^{-1}$; e.g., Genzel et al. 2011; Arribas et al. 2014) and compact starbursts are often associated with flatter radio spectral indices than that observed here (Murphy et al. 2013). We further disfavour the star formation scenario because: (1) there are not two continuum peaks observed in the *HST* imaging (i.e., to correspond to both the HR-A and HR-B radio structures) and (2) HR-B is unlikely to be an obscured star forming region because the dust in this source is not located at this position (see Fig. 5.4; also see Keel et al. 2015).

5.4.2.2 Quasar Winds

A possible origin of the radio emission in radio-quiet quasars is accretion disk winds (see e.g., Shlosman et al. 1985; Murray et al. 1995; Crenshaw et al. 2003), which propagate through the surrounding interstellar medium (ISM) to produce non-thermal radio emission (Zakamska and Greene 2014; Nims et al. 2015). Based on the energy conserving outflow model of Faucher-Giguère and Quataert (2012), Nims et al. (2015) explored the observational signatures of these winds in the radio and X-rays. In their model, the wind causes a shock that propagates outwards into the ambient medium and can reach distances of $\gtrsim 1 \text{ kpc}$ with velocities $\sim 1000 \text{ km s}^{-1}$

(at this point it interacts with the ISM and decelerates). They predict a steep-spectral index of $\alpha \approx -1$, which is consistent with our observations (see Table 5.2). It is less clear what this model predicts for the morphology of the radio emission; however, the propagation of the wind is predicted to be influenced by the properties and distribution of the ISM, and it will preferentially escape along the path of “least resistance” (Faucher-Giguère and Quataert 2012). For the Teacup AGN, we find that the position of the ionised outflow, and the associated radio emission, is directed away from the dusty regions (Fig. 5.4), which may be consistent with these predictions.

In the fiducial model of Nims et al. (2015), the interaction of the winds with the ISM is predicted to result in a radio luminosity of

$$\nu L_\nu \approx 10^{-5} \xi_{-2} L_{\text{AGN}} \left(\frac{L_{\text{kin}}}{0.05 L_{\text{AGN}}} \right), \quad (5.4.2)$$

where ξ_{-2} is the scaled efficiency (i.e., 1% of the shock energy goes into relativistic electrons), L_{AGN} is the bolometric luminosity of the AGN and L_{kin} is the kinetic luminosity of the wind. For the Teacup AGN, Nims et al. (2015) would predict a radio luminosity of $\nu L_\nu \approx 20 \times 10^{39} \text{ erg s}^{-1}$ (i.e., $L_{1.5\text{GHz}} \approx 13 \times 10^{23} \text{ W Hz}^{-1}$), using their fiducial values (i.e., $\xi_{-2} = 1$; $L_{\text{kin}} = 0.05 L_{\text{AGN}}$). This is a factor of ≈ 8 above the core radio luminosity, that we observe, of $\nu L_\nu(1.5 \text{ GHz}) = 2.6 \times 10^{39} \text{ erg s}^{-1}$ (i.e., $L_{1.5\text{GHz}} = 1.7 \times 10^{23} \text{ W Hz}^{-1}$). Given the nature of the simple model assumptions (e.g., the assumed properties of the ISM; see Nims et al. 2015), we can not use this discrepancy as strong evidence that the radio emission in the core of the Teacup AGN, and the associated outflow, are not driven by a quasar wind.

5.4.2.3 Compact Jets and Nuclear Activity

Compact radio emission (i.e., on $\lesssim 5 \text{ kpc}$ scales) in radio-quiet quasars may be associated with nuclear coronal activity (i.e., the region around the AGN accretion disk) or compact radio jets (e.g., Kukula et al. 1998; Ulvestad et al. 2005; Laor and Behar 2008). Nuclear coronal activity is predicted to produce flat spectral indices (i.e., $\alpha \approx 0$; Laor and Behar 2008), which is not what is observed in the Teacup AGN (Fig. 5.2).

In contrast, the core emission in the Teacup AGN shares many characteristics with radio-loud (with $L_{5\text{GHz}} \gtrsim 10^{26} \text{ W Hz}^{-1}$) compact, steep spectrum quasars, that show steep radio spectra, have jets and lobes on small scales and exhibit broad [O III] emission-line profiles (e.g., Gelderman and Whittle 1994; see review in O’Dea 1998). In particular, it is plausible that the HR-B radio structure is a hot spot of a radio jet, where it interacts with the ionised gas in the local ISM and drives a high velocity outflow (see Fig. 5.4). This is also analogous to previous observations of a small number of AGN showing compact jets interacting with the ionised gas (e.g., Capetti et al. 1999; Barbosa et al. 2009).

5.4.2.4 Summary of Core Region

Overall the radio emission and outflow in the core of the Teacup AGN are consistent with being produced by radio jets or quasar winds that are interacting with the ISM in the host galaxy. This interaction could result in the high-velocity ionised gas that we observe (see Figs. 5.4 and 5.5). The compact sizes and the narrow angular range of the radio emitting region in the core, in particular for the HR-B structure, may favour the jet scenario.

5.4.3 What Powers the ≈ 10 kpc Radio Bubbles?

The radio bubbles of the Teacup AGN (see Fig. 5.4) are reminiscent of several of the large-scale ($\gtrsim 1$ –10 kpc) radio structures observed in local Seyferts (i.e., low luminosity AGN), that are often associated with optical emission-line regions and disturbed ionised gas (e.g., Colbert et al. 1996; Whittle and Wilson 2004; Hota and Saikia 2006; Kharb et al. 2006). Furthermore, the morphology of the large-scale arc of ionised gas in the Teacup AGN (Fig. 5.4) is analogous to some local starburst galaxies and AGN that host “super bubbles”, or arcs/filaments of optical emission lines (e.g., Heckman et al. 1990; Veilleux et al. 1994, 2005; Capetti et al. 1996; Ferruit et al. 1999; Whittle and Wilson 2004; also see the analogous $z \approx 2$ radio-loud AGN in Hatch et al. 2013). These emission-line features are often attributed to the cooler edges of hot gas bubbles (with $\approx 10^{6-8}$ K) that are expanding and sweeping up the ambient ISM material (e.g., Heckman et al. 1990; Capetti et al. 1996; Greene et al. 2014). Simulations and theoretical models have shown that compact radio jets (i.e., $\lesssim 1$ kpc), or quasar winds, can interact with an inhomogeneous ambient ISM, transfer energy and momentum and drive energy-conserving outflowing bubbles, which expand and accelerate more clouds on larger scales (e.g., Sutherland and Bicknell 2007; Faucher-Giguère and Quataert 2012; Zubovas and King 2012; Wagner et al. 2012, 2013). It is therefore possible that compact radio jets or a quasar wind, which may reside in the core regions (see Sect. 5.4.2), are responsible for the ≈ 10 –12 kpc radio bubbles and the associated arc of ionised gas (Figs. 5.1 and 5.3).

Despite its modest radio luminosity ($L_{1.4\text{GHz}} = 5 \times 10^{23} \text{ WHz}^{-1}$), the Teacup AGN harbors ≈ 10 kpc bi-polar radio bubbles, analogous to those around mechanically-dominated AGN (e.g., Bîrzan et al. 2004). This may reveal that it is mechanical energy input that is the crucial mechanism for AGN feedback, even in radio-quiet systems. Deep X-ray observations with *Chandra* X-ray observations are now crucial to investigate the hot gas content around the Teacup AGN and ultimately assess the properties and impact of “AGN feedback” in this representative low- z quasar. These observations will enable us to measure the temperature and distribution of the hot gas around the Teacup AGN, establish if there is a hot gas component associated with the radio bubbles and measure, the total energy content of the bubbles (following e.g., Bîrzan et al. 2008; Mingo et al. 2011; Greene et al. 2014).

5.5 Conclusions

We have presented VLA radio imaging, VIMOS/IFU optical spectroscopy and HST imaging on the Teacup AGN; a $z = 0.085$ type 2 radio-quiet quasar. Our main conclusions are:

- We observe, steep spectrum ($\alpha = -1$) bi-polar radio bubbles extended 10–12 kpc each side of the nucleus. The eastern bubble, which has an edge that is co-spatial with a luminous arc of ionised gas, is brighter than the western bubble.
- Our high-resolution imaging reveals two compact radio structures within the central ≈ 1 kpc. A very bright core and a fainter structure 0.8 kpc, positioned at the based of the eastern bubble. Both of these structures have a steep spectrum with $\alpha = -1$. The fainter radio structure is co-spatial with a $v \approx 800 \text{ km s}^{-1}$ ionised outflow.
- The radio emission in both the core and extended bubbles is not consistent with being produced by star-formation. We favour an interpretation where a radio jet, or possible quasar wind, is interacting with the ISM in the central kiloparsec and driving a high-velocity ionised outflow. Additionally, the AGN is injecting mechanical energy into the ISM on 10 kpc scales revealed by the bi-polar radio bubbles.

The Teacup AGN exhibits many of the predicted features of a source that is the transition between an active phase of star formation and AGN activity to a quiescent elliptical galaxy via AGN feedback (following e.g., Hopkins et al. 2006), i.e., a post-merger galaxy that hosts an AGN that is injecting energy into the gas in the host galaxy. The *HST* imaging reveals that the Teacup AGN resides in a bulge-dominated galaxy, with shell-like features, indicative of previous merger activity (Fig. 5.4; also see Keel et al. 2015). This source is currently hosting quasar activity (Harrison et al. 2014) that may be in decline (Gagne et al. 2014) and our new observations have revealed high-velocity ionised gas and radio bubbles that imply that considerable energy injection into the ISM is occurring on ≈ 1 –12 kpc scales, indicative of AGN feedback.

References

- Alexander, D. M., & Hickox, R. C. 2012, *New A Rev.*, 56, 93
- Arribas, S., Colina, L., Bellocchi, E., Maiolino, R., & Villar-Martín, M. 2014, *A&A*, 568, A14
- Barbosa, F. K. B., Storchi-Bergmann, T., Cid Fernandes, R., Winge, C., & Schmitt, H. 2009, *MNRAS*, 396, 2
- Birzan, L., McNamara, B. R., Nulsen, P. E. J., Carilli, C. L., & Wise, M. W. 2008, *ApJ*, 686, 859
- Birzan, L., Rafferty, D. A., McNamara, B. R., Wise, M. W., & Nulsen, P. E. J. 2004, *ApJ*, 607, 800
- Bower, R. G., Benson, A. J., & Crain, R. A. 2012, *MNRAS*, 422, 2816
- Bower, R. G., Benson, A. J., Malbon, R., et al. 2006, *MNRAS*, 370, 645
- Capetti, A., Axon, D. J., Macchetto, F., Sparks, W. B., & Boksenberg, A. 1996, *ApJ*, 469, 554

- Capetti, A., Axon, D. J., Macchetto, F. D., Marconi, A., & Winge, C. 1999, *Mem. Soc. Astron. Italiana*, 70, 41
- Colbert, E. J. M., Baum, S. A., Gallimore, J. F., O’Dea, C. P., & Christensen, J. A. 1996, *ApJ*, 467, 551
- Condon, J. J., Kellermann, K. I., Kimball, A. E., Ivezić, Ž., & Perley, R. A. 2013, *ApJ*, 768, 37
- Crenshaw, D. M., Kraemer, S. B., & George, I. M. 2003, *ARAA*, 41, 117
- Diamond-Stanic, A. M., Moustakas, J., Tremonti, C. A., et al. 2012, *ApJL*, 755, L26
- Faucher-Giguère, C.-A., & Quataert, E. 2012, *MNRAS*, 425, 605
- Ferruit, P., Wilson, A. S., Falcke, H., et al. 1999, *MNRAS*, 309, 1
- Gabor, J. M., & Bournaud, F. 2014, *MNRAS*, 441, 1615
- Gagne, J. P., Crenshaw, D. M., Kraemer, S. B., et al. 2014, *ApJ*, 792, 72
- Gelderman, R., & Whittle, M. 1994, *APJS*, 91, 491
- Genzel, R., Newman, S., Jones, T., et al. 2011, *ApJ*, 733, 101
- Greene, J. E., Pooley, D., Zakamska, N. L., Comerford, J. M., & Sun, A.-L. 2014, *ApJ*, 788, 54
- Harrison, C. M., Alexander, D. M., Mullaney, J. R., & Swinbank, A. M. 2014, *MNRAS*, 441, 3306
- Harrison, C. M., Thomson, A. P., Alexander, D. M., et al. 2015, *ApJ*, 800, 45
- Hatch, N. A., Röttgering, H. J. A., Miley, G. K., et al. 2013, *MNRAS*, 436, 2244
- Heckman, T. M., Armus, L., & Miley, G. K. 1990, *APJS*, 74, 833
- Heckman, T. M., Miley, G. K., van Breugel, W. J. M., & Butcher, H. R. 1981, *ApJ*, 247, 403
- Heckman, T. M., Borthakur, S., Overzier, R., et al. 2011, *ApJ*, 730, 5
- Helou, G., Soifer, B. T., & Rowan-Robinson, M. 1985, *ApJL*, 298, L7
- Hopkins, P. F., Hernquist, L., Cox, T. J., et al. 2006, *APJS*, 163, 1
- Hota, A., & Saikia, D. J. 2006, *MNRAS*, 371, 945
- Iverson, R. J., Magnelli, B., Ibar, E., et al. 2010, *A&A*, 518, L31
- Keel, W. C., Chojnowski, S. D., Bennert, V. N., et al. 2012, *MNRAS*, 420, 878
- Keel, W. C., Maksym, W. P., Bennert, V. N., et al. 2015, *AJ*, 149, 155
- Kharb, P., O’Dea, C. P., Baum, S. A., Colbert, E. J. M., & Xu, C. 2006, *ApJ*, 652, 177
- Kimball, A. E., Kellermann, K. I., Condon, J. J., Ivezić, Ž., & Perley, R. A. 2011, *ApJL*, 739, L29
- Kukula, M. J., Dunlop, J. S., Hughes, D. H., & Rawlings, S. 1998, *MNRAS*, 297, 366
- Laor, A., & Behar, E. 2008, *MNRAS*, 390, 847
- McNamara, B. R., & Nulsen, P. E. J. 2012, *New Journal of Physics*, 14, 055023
- Mingo, B., Hardcastle, M. J., Croston, J. H., et al. 2011, *ApJ*, 731, 21
- Mullaney, J. R., Alexander, D. M., Fine, S., et al. 2013, *MNRAS*, 433, 622
- Murphy, E. J., Stierwalt, S., Armus, L., Condon, J. J., & Evans, A. S. 2013, *ApJ*, 768, 2
- Murray, N., Chiang, J., Grossman, S. A., & Voit, G. M. 1995, *ApJ*, 451, 498
- Nelson, C. H., & Whittle, M. 1996, *ApJ*, 465, 96
- Nims, J., Quataert, E., & Faucher-Giguère, C.-A. 2015, *MNRAS*, 447, 3612
- O’Dea, C. P. 1998, *PASP*, 110, 493
- Rupke, D. S., Veilleux, S., & Sanders, D. B. 2005a, 160, 87
- Rupke, D. S., Veilleux, S., & Sanders, D. B. 2005a, *APJS*, 160, 87—, 2005b, *APJS*, 160, 115
- Sell, P. H., Tremonti, C. A., Hickox, R. C., et al. 2014, *MNRAS*, 441, 3417
- Shlosman, I., Vitello, P. A., & Shaviv, G. 1985, *ApJ*, 294, 96
- Sutherland, R. S., & Bicknell, G. V. 2007, *APJS*, 173, 37
- Ulvestad, J. S., Antonucci, R. R. J., & Barvainis, R. 2005, *ApJ*, 621, 123
- Veilleux, S. 1991, *APJS*, 75, 383
- Veilleux, S., Cecil, G., & Bland-Hawthorn, J. 2005, *ARAA*, 43, 769
- Veilleux, S., Cecil, G., Bland-Hawthorn, J., et al. 1994, *ApJ*, 433, 48
- Wagner, A. Y., Bicknell, G. V., & Umemura, M. 2012, *ApJ*, 757, 136
- Wagner, A. Y., Umemura, M., & Bicknell, G. V. 2013, *ApJL*, 763, L18
- Whittle, M., & Wilson, A. S. 2004, *AJ*, 127, 606

- Wilson, A. S., & Heckman, T. M. 1985, in *Astrophysics of Active Galaxies and Quasi-Stellar Objects*, ed. J. S. Miller, 39–109
- Xu, C., Livio, M., & Baum, S. 1999, *AJ*, 118, 1169
- Zakamska, N. L., & Greene, J. E. 2014, *MNRAS*, 442, 784
- Zakamska, N. L., Strauss, M. A., Heckman, T. M., Ivezić, Ž., & Krolik, J. H. 2004, *AJ*, 128, 1002
- Zubovas, K., & King, A. 2012, *ApJL*, 745, L34

Chapter 6

No Submillimetre Signature of Star Formation Suppression Among X-Ray Luminous AGN

Abstract In this chapter we aim to answer the questions: is there any evidence that X-ray luminous active galactic nuclei (AGN) have suppressed star-formation rates compared to the galaxy population as a whole? Many theoretical models require powerful active galactic nuclei (AGN) to suppress star formation in distant galaxies in order to reproduce the observed properties of today's massive galaxies. The observational work that has been investigating the star formation rates of powerful AGN has provided conflicting results. In particular, a recent study based on *Herschel*-SPIRE observations claimed toect support for star formation suppression, reporting a significant decrease in the mean star-formation rates (SFRs) of the most luminous AGN ($L_X > 10^{44}$ erg s⁻¹) at $z \approx 1-3$. However, this study was based on a small number of targets. In this chapter we extend these results using *Herschel*-SPIRE 250 μ m data to achieve an order of magnitude improvement in the number of sources at $L_X > 10^{44}$ erg s⁻¹ in the same redshift range. By using these data to measure the star formation rates as a function of AGN power, we find no evidence for suppressed star formation in the most luminous AGN. The mean SFRs of the AGN are constant over the broad X-ray luminosity range of $L_X \approx 10^{43}-10^{45}$ erg s⁻¹. The star formation rates are also consistent with the mean SFRs of the general population of star-forming galaxies at these redshifts (i.e., (SFRs) $\approx 100-200 M_\odot$ year⁻¹). We suggest that the previous results were likely due to low number statistics. We discuss our results in the context of current theoretical models. We suggest that these observations may not show any evidence for the predicted suppressed star formation rates because of the variable and short timescales on which luminous AGN activity is observed and the longer/delayed timescales that it takes for this activity to impact upon the star formation in the host galaxies.

6.1 Motivation

In Sect. 1.5 of this thesis we described how many theoretical models predict that the most luminous AGN drive outflows and suppress star formation in their host galaxies. In the previous chapters of this thesis we have searched for and characterised galaxy-wide outflows in AGN. In this chapter, we ask if there is evidence that

luminous AGN have suppressed star formation rates (SFRs). Several papers, previous to the work presented here, had investigated the SFRs of moderate luminosity X-ray detected AGN (i.e., $L_{2-8\text{keV}} \approx 10^{42-44} \text{ erg s}^{-1}$) and found the general agreement that the average SFRs are consistent with non-AGN host galaxies (see Sect. 1.5.3 and below). However, there are significant differences in the results presented on the SFRs of the most luminous AGN (i.e., $L_{2-8\text{keV}} \gtrsim 10^{44} \text{ erg s}^{-1}$). The motivation of the work presented in this chapter was to investigate the reasons for these discrepancies and provide a clearer picture on the SFRs of luminous AGN. A general introduction is provided in Sect. 1.5, whilst in this chapter we only give a short introduction that is focused on the work presented here. Significant portions of the work presented in this chapter have been published in Harrison et al. (2012b); however, the text presented here has been adapted for this thesis, including an extended introduction.

6.2 Introduction

There are several reasons to believe that there should be a relationship between the growth of black holes (i.e., AGN activity) and the build up of stellar mass (i.e., star formation rates) of galaxies. A positive correlation between these two quantities is implied by two fundamental observations: (1) the volume-averaged black hole growth and volume-averaged star formation rates of the Universe show similar evolution as a function of redshift (e.g., Heckman et al. 2004; Merloni 2004; Aird et al. 2010) and (2) locally, there is a tight correlation between the mass of black holes and the stellar bulges in which they reside (e.g., Kormendy and Richstone 1995; Magorrian et al. 1998). These two observations provide indirect evidence that AGN activity and star formation are closely linked. In contrast, theoretical models of galaxy evolution imply that there may be a *negative* correlation between AGN activity and star formation. Most successful models of galaxy evolution require that luminous AGN (i.e., the sights of rapid black hole growth) inject considerable energy into the gas in their host galaxies, and beyond, resulting in the suppression of star formation (e.g., Di Matteo et al. 2005; Bower et al. 2006; Booth and Schaye 2010; Debuhr et al. 2012). Based on these theoretical predictions the host galaxies of the most luminous AGN may be expected to have lower star formation rates than those hosting little or no AGN activity.

A large suite of studies have investigated the relationship between AGN activity and star formation out to high redshifts ($z \approx 3$), using a variety of techniques (e.g., Shao et al. 2010; Xue et al. 2010; Lutz et al. 2010; Mainieri et al. 2011). Arguably the most efficient way to build up large unbiased samples of galaxies hosting AGN activity is to use deep X-ray surveys as the luminous X-ray emission produced by AGN is largely insensitive to obscuration (see e.g., Brandt and Hasinger 2005). Potentially the most reliable method to measure the star formation rates of these sources is to use far infrared measurements. Far infrared emission is produced by the warm dust, which has been heated by young stars, in the regions where star formation is occurring. Unlike other tracers, such as optical or ultra-violet light, it is largely unaffected by obscuring material.

Deep X-ray and infrared data have been used on numerous occasions to constrain the AGN activity and star formation rates (SFRs), respectively (Mullaney et al. 2010; Hatziminaoglou et al. 2010; Lutz et al. 2010; Shao et al. 2010; Mainieri et al. 2011; Mullaney et al. 2012a; Santini et al. 2012; Rosario et al. 2012; Page et al. 2012; Rovilos et al. 2012). In particular the recent deep far infrared surveys performed by the *Herschel* space telescope has lead to significant progress in this field. These studies have shown that the mean SFRs of moderate-luminosity AGN ($L_X \approx 10^{42}$ – 10^{44} erg s $^{-1}$) out to $z \approx 3$ are comparable to those of star-forming galaxies with similar redshifts (e.g., Noeske et al. 2007; Elbaz et al. 2007; Daddi et al. 2007; Pannella et al. 2009). However, there are conflicting results for the most luminous AGN (i.e., $L_X > 10^{44}$ erg s $^{-1}$). The majority of these studies arguing that the mean SFR either rises or remains flat towards the highest luminosities (e.g., Lutz et al. 2010; Shao et al. 2010; Rosario et al. 2012; Rovilos et al. 2012). Recently, Page et al. (2012) used *Chandra* X-ray and *Herschel*-SPIRE submillimetre data in the *Chandra* Deep Field-North (CDF-N) to report that the mean SFRs of luminous AGN ($L_X > 10^{44}$ erg s $^{-1}$) at $z \approx 1$ –3 are significantly lower than those of moderate-luminosity AGN. This study appears to be in direct agreement with the theoretical prediction of suppressed star formation by luminous AGN. However, these results are in direct disagreement with other studies, many of which also used *Herschel* data in similarly deep fields (e.g., Lutz et al. 2010; Shao et al. 2010; Rosario et al. 2012; Rovilos et al. 2012). It is therefore crucial to understand the differences between these studies and provide a clear picture of how star formation rates change as a function of AGN luminosity.

The aim of this chapter is to extend and test the Page et al. (2012) study. A clear limitation of the Page et al. (2012) study was the small number of sources in the $L_X > 10^{44}$ erg s $^{-1}$ bins (≈ 7 –14 objects). Therefore, we use *Herschel*-SPIRE 250 μ m data in the wider-area COSMOS field, improving the source statistics for $L_X > 10^{44}$ erg s $^{-1}$ AGN by an order of magnitude. We also repeat our analysis using *Herschel*-SPIRE 250 μ m data in the CDF-N and *Chandra* Deep Field South (CDF-S) fields to explore the effect of using smaller fields. In our analysis we use $H_0 = 71$ km s $^{-1}$, $\Omega_M = 0.27$, $\Omega_\Lambda = 0.73$ and assume a Salpeter initial mass function (IMF).

6.3 Catalogues and Data

6.3.1 X-Ray Data

Our samples of AGN are X-ray selected and cover a broad range of luminosities ($L_X = 10^{42}$ – 10^{45} erg s $^{-1}$) over the redshift range $z = 1$ –3 (see Fig. 6.1). We use the CDF-N (Alexander et al. 2003), CDF-S (Xue et al. 2011) and COSMOS (Elvis et al. 2009) AGN samples to obtain statistically meaningful numbers of AGN in key L_X ranges. Redshifts for the CDF-N and CDF-S samples were taken from Bauer et al.

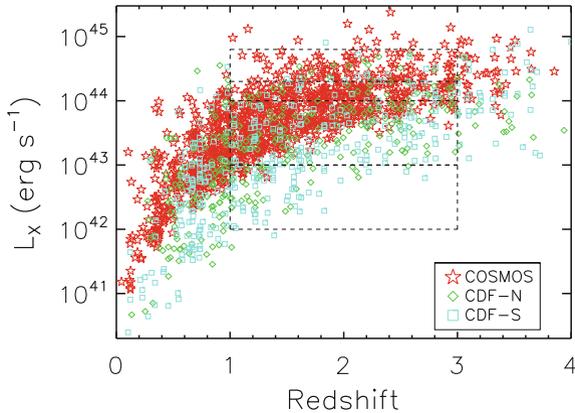


Fig. 6.1 Rest-frame 2–8 keV luminosities (not-absorption corrected) of the X-ray AGN detected in the three deep fields (see Sect. 6.3 for details) versus redshift. The areas of parameter space used in our stacking procedures (see Fig. 6.3) are illustrated with the *dashed lines*. Caution should be taken when interpreting the lowest X-ray luminosity bin ($L_X = 10^{42}–10^{43}$ erg s $^{-1}$) as it is incomplete at $z \gtrsim 2$

in prep. and Xue et al. (2011), respectively. Redshifts for the COSMOS sample were taken from Civano et al. (2012). Unless otherwise stated, we include both photometric and spectroscopic redshifts, which comprise ≈ 53 and $\approx 47\%$ of the combined samples respectively; however, we note that our conclusions do not change if we only consider spectroscopic redshifts. Following Page et al. (2012) we derive the rest-frame observed (i.e., not absorption-corrected) 2–8 keV luminosity (L_X) of AGN in each field using $L_X = 4\pi D^2 F_X (1+z)^{(\Gamma-2)}$, where F_X is the observed X-ray flux¹ (2–8 keV), D is the luminosity distance, z is the redshift and Γ is the spectral index used for k -corrections (we assume $\Gamma = 1.9$).

In Fig. 6.1 we show L_X versus redshift for the X-ray AGN in each of these fields. These three samples are highly complimentary: the ultra-deep CDF-N and CDF-S samples provide large numbers of moderate luminosity AGN at $z = 1–3$ (i.e., $L_X = 10^{42}–10^{44}$ erg s $^{-1}$) while the shallower, wider-area COSMOS survey populates the high-luminosity ($L_X > 10^{44}$ erg s $^{-1}$) portion of the parameter space largely missed by these small area surveys.

6.3.2 IR Data

The mean SFRs for our AGN samples are derived from 250 μm observations taken by the SPIRE instrument on board *Herschel* which are relatively unaffected by contamination from the AGN (e.g., Hatziminaoglou et al. 2010) or obscuration due to

¹We note Elvis et al. (2009) report 2–10 keV fluxes, which we convert to 2–8 keV fluxes by assuming $\Gamma = 1.9$ (i.e., a factor of ≈ 0.85 correction).

dust. Our results are primarily based on the observations of the CDF-N, CDF-S and COSMOS fields undertaken as part of the HerMES campaign (described in Oliver et al. 2012). We downloaded the individual level-2 data products from each scan of each field (totalling ~ 14 , ~ 20 , and ~ 50 h in CDF-N, CDF-S and COSMOS, respectively) from the *Herschel* ESA archive and then aligned and coadded the images. The coadded images were then aligned onto a common world co-ordinate system. We also checked for consistency between our own coadds and those produced using the standard HIPE v9.0 pipeline.

We also make use of $250\ \mu\text{m}$ SPIRE observations of the CDF-N field that were undertaken as part of the GOODS-*Herschel* program (GOODS-*H*; P.I.: D. Elbaz) that cover the whole of the CDF-N (totalling 44 h when combined with the HerMES observations). The observations and steps used to produce the science images are described in Elbaz et al. (2011). We note that our results derived from the GOODS-*H* CDF-N observations are consistent with those derived from the HerMES observations of the same field.

6.4 Measuring Average Star Formation Rates

To determine the mean SFRs of AGN as a function of L_X we split our samples into a number of L_X bins (see Table 6.1). The majority of the X-ray AGN are not individually detected by *Herschel*-SPIRE (e.g., Hatziminaoglou et al. 2010; Page et al. 2012) and therefore, we rely on stacking analysis to obtain the mean $250\ \mu\text{m}$ fluxes of our AGN samples in each bin. We stack at the optical positions of all X-ray AGN in our samples, whether they are individually $250\ \mu\text{m}$ -detected or not (following Page et al. 2012). The point-spread function (PSF) of the SPIRE $250\ \mu\text{m}$ science images is normalised to 1 and in units of mJy beam^{-1} , such that the mean $250\ \mu\text{m}$ flux was taken to be the central pixel value of each stacked image.

To determine if the measured fluxes from our stacked images are significantly above the background we employed a Monte-Carlo approach, which quantifies the level of background and confusion noise (i.e., flux contribution to our stacked images from nearby, unassociated sources). Firstly, along with each “true” stacked image we also made 10,000 “random” stacks, stacking the same number of random positions around the field as in our true stacks. The mean flux of the random stacks was subtracted from that of the true stack, effectively removing any systematic contribution from the background or confusion. Secondly, we compare our measured “corrected” fluxes of our true stacks to the distribution of fluxes from our random stacks. We consider a stacked signal to be significant if the flux is greater than the flux of 95 % of the random trials. Following this criterion, all but one of our stacked images have flux measurements that are significant (see Sect. 6.5 for details). We note that this method of randomly choosing positions to estimate the background does not take into account any clustering between X-ray AGN and IR-sources (this was also not considered in Page et al. 2012). While this will not affect the SFR- L_X trends, the mean

Table 6.1 (1) X-ray luminosity (2–8 keV) range of each bin ($\log[\text{erg s}^{-1}]$); (2) Number of X-ray AGN in each bin; (3) Mean redshift; (4) Mean L_X ($\log[\text{erg s}^{-1}]$); (5) Mean 250 μm flux and uncertainties (mJy); (6) Mean star formation rate ($M_\odot \text{ year}^{-1}$).

L_X range	N_{AGN}	$\langle z \rangle$	$\langle L_X \rangle$	$\langle S_{250} \rangle$	$\langle \text{SFR} \rangle$
(1)	(2)	(3)	(4)	(5)	(6)
CDF-N (HerMES; Fig. 6.2) ^a					
43.00–43.33	8	1.8	43.2	$5.4^{+3.0}_{-3.0}$	108^{+61}_{-60}
43.33–43.66	20	1.7	43.5	$9.4^{+2.3}_{-2.4}$	176^{+105}_{-54}
43.66–44.00	11	1.9	43.8	$10.9^{+3.7}_{-3.6}$	297^{+100}_{-134}
44.00–44.33	12	2.0	44.2	$4.8^{+2.5}_{-2.4}$	115^{+56}_{-55}
44.33–44.80	7	2.1	44.6	<4.4	<127
CDF-N (GOODS- <i>H</i> ; Fig. 6.3)					
42.00–43.00	35	1.3	42.8	$3.5^{+1.1}_{-1.1}$	46^{+14}_{-14}
43.00–44.00	114	1.9	43.6	$6.8^{+1.0}_{-0.9}$	151^{+22}_{-21}
44.00–44.80	37	2.2	44.3	$2.2^{+0.9}_{-0.9}$	69^{+25}_{-26}
CDF-S (Fig. 6.3)					
42.00–43.00	53	1.4	42.7	$4.3^{+1.0}_{-1.1}$	63^{+16}_{-16}
43.00–44.00	114	1.9	43.5	$5.3^{+1.0}_{-1.0}$	117^{+22}_{-21}
44.00–44.80	35	2.2	44.3	$7.2^{+1.4}_{-1.4}$	276^{+59}_{-92}
COSMOS (Fig. 6.3)					
44.00–44.30	173	2.0	44.1	$6.0^{+0.9}_{-0.9}$	145^{+22}_{-22}
44.30–44.80	111	2.1	44.5	$6.3^{+1.1}_{-1.1}$	175^{+50}_{-31}

The quoted uncertainties are derived from our bootstrap method (see Sect. 6.4)

^aTo be consistent with Page et al. (2012) we use the same L_X bins and only include AGN with spectroscopic redshifts when stacking the HerMES data for the CDF-N field (see Sect. 6.5)

background subtracted from each stacked image may be slightly under-estimated, resulting in the absolute mean SFRs quoted being slightly over-estimated. However, we note that our results are consistent with studies that are less affected by confusion noise (e.g., Mullaney et al. 2012a; Rosario et al. 2012), giving confidence in our procedures.

We used the spectral energy distribution (SED) library of Chary and Elbaz (2001) to convert mean 250 μm fluxes from our stacked images to mean integrated 8–1000 μm infrared luminosities (L_{IR}), selecting a redshifted Chary and Elbaz 2001 SED on the basis of the monochromatic luminosity probed by the 250 μm waveband. These mean L_{IR} values were converted to mean SFRs using Kennicutt (1998). In the redshift range $z = 1$ –3 investigated here, the observed 250 μm fluxes correspond to the peak of the SEDs in the rest frame. As such the L_{250} to L_{IR} correction factors do not vary much as a function of SED shape when compared to using shorter wavelengths (see Fig. 3 in Elbaz et al. 2010). Indeed, when we compared *all* of the Chary and Elbaz (2001) SEDs, redshifted to $z = 2$, the conversion factors were consistent within $\approx 20\%$; we also repeated our analysis using the main-sequence SED from Elbaz et al. (2011) for all of the bins and found no significant difference. While the choice of

SED adds a small additional uncertainty in the measured SFRs (such that quoted absolute SFRs should be used with care), all of the observed trends, and hence the main conclusions of this chapter, remain unaffected. We also show in Sect. 6.5 that we reproduce the results of Page et al. (2012).

Upper and lower limits on the mean SFRs for each of our L_X bins were calculated using a bootstrapping technique, therefore taking into account the distribution of SFRs in each stack. We randomly subsample (with replacement) the AGN in each of our bins, restack and recalculate the mean SFR. We did this 10,000 times for each bin to produce a distribution of mean SFRs. The quoted upper and lower limits on the mean SFRs correspond to the 16th and 84th percentiles (i.e., incorporating 68%, or $\approx \pm 1\sigma$) of this distribution (Table 6.1).

6.5 Results

We first stacked sub-samples of X-ray AGN in the CDF-N. In an attempt to reproduce the results of Page et al. (2012) we split the sample into the same luminosity bins used in their study (Table 6.1) and only included AGN with spectroscopic redshifts; see Fig. 6.2. We find excellent agreement between our mean SFRs and those of Page et al. (2012) (i.e., data points are consistent within their uncertainties), demonstrating the compatibility of the procedures used to derive these results.² In agreement with Page et al. (2012), we do not obtain a significant flux measurement from the stacked 250 μm image of our highest L_X bin ($\log[L_X/\text{erg s}^{-1}] = 44.33\text{--}44.80$). However, unlike Page et al. (2012), we find our upper limit is consistent with the mean SFRs of the lowest L_X bins.

The non-detection at FIR wavelengths of the AGN in our highest L_X bin in the CDF-N field, combined with the small numbers of AGN in this bin (7 sources), clearly demonstrates the need for larger numbers of sources at high X-ray luminosities. To achieve this, we performed the same stacking procedures using the COSMOS survey. The inclusion of the COSMOS AGN means that the number of sources in our highest L_X bins are now greater by an order of magnitude (Fig. 6.1 and Table 6.1). As such, we can now place tighter constraints on the mean SFRs of high-luminosity AGN. On the basis of our stacking analysis in the COSMOS field, we find that the mean SFRs of AGN with $L_X > 10^{44} \text{ erg s}^{-1}$ are consistent with those of $L_X = 10^{43}\text{--}10^{44} \text{ erg s}^{-1}$ AGN ($\approx 100\text{--}200 M_\odot \text{ year}^{-1}$; see Fig. 6.3 and Table 6.1). This implies that the mean SFR of $z = 1\text{--}3$ AGN is independent of X-ray luminosity (although increases with increasing redshifts), in broad agreement with Rosario et al. (2012) and indicates that the flat SFR distribution at $L_X < 10^{44} \text{ erg s}^{-1}$ (e.g., Lutz et al.

²We note that Page et al. (2012) used a different technique to that adopted by us here; they derive average SFRs by fitting a modified black body to the SPIRE fluxes of each source.

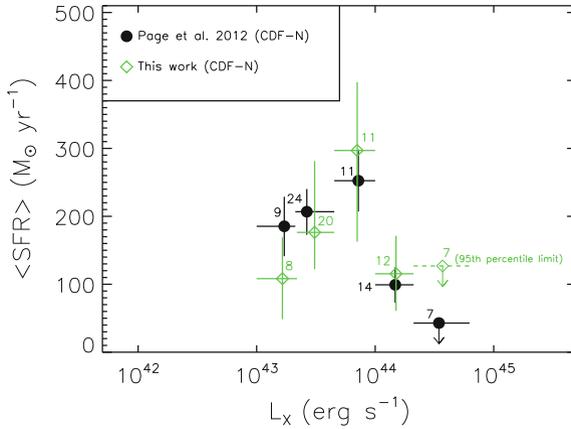


Fig. 6.2 Mean star formation rate (SFR) versus X-ray luminosity for AGN in the CDF-N field compared to Page et al. (2012); see Sect. 6.4 for details. We find excellent agreement between our mean SFRs and those of Page et al. (2012) across all L_X bins; we indicate the number of sources in each bin (the differences in the number of objects between our study and Page et al. (2012) are due to differences in the redshift catalogues). We note that for Page et al. (2012) the values were extracted directly from their figures as tabulated values were unavailable. As with Page et al. (2012), we do not measure a significant flux in the highest L_X bin for which we also include the 95th percentile limit (see Sect. 6.4). This limit is broadly consistent with the mean SFRs for our lower L_X bins

2010; Shao et al. 2010; Mullaney et al. 2012a; Rosario et al. 2012) continues out to at least $L_X \approx 10^{44.8}$ erg s $^{-1}$.³

The results derived from our stacking of AGN in the COSMOS field may suggest that poor source statistics and potentially field-to-field variations (i.e., cosmic variance) are at least partially responsible for the disagreement between the results from COSMOS and CDF-N at high X-ray luminosities. To further investigate this we also stacked the SPIRE data in the CDF-S field, which is of a similar size as the CDF-N and contains approximately the same number of high L_X AGN (Fig. 6.1). We also restack the CDF-N AGN using the deeper 250 μ m observations taken as part of the GOODS-*H* program since this is of comparable depth to the HerMES CDF-S observations. As shown in Fig. 6.3, we find broad agreement between the mean SFRs of moderate luminosity AGN (i.e., $L_X < 10^{44}$ erg s $^{-1}$) in both fields: the mean SFRs with X-ray luminosity over the range $L_X \approx 10^{42}$ – 10^{44} erg s $^{-1}$ are consistent with those expected from typical star-forming galaxies with the average redshifts and typical stellar masses observed for the AGN host galaxies. The increasing specific SFRs with redshift (e.g., Elbaz et al. 2011) is likely to drive the apparent increase in the mean SFRs between $L_X \approx 10^{42}$ – 10^{43} erg s $^{-1}$ and $L_X \approx 10^{43}$ – 10^{44} erg s $^{-1}$ (i.e., they have different mean redshifts).

³We note that this approach is different to averaging over *all* L_X and L_{IR} over *all* star-forming galaxies (whether X-ray detected or not) where a clear relationship between L_X and SFR is found (see Mullaney et al. 2012b).

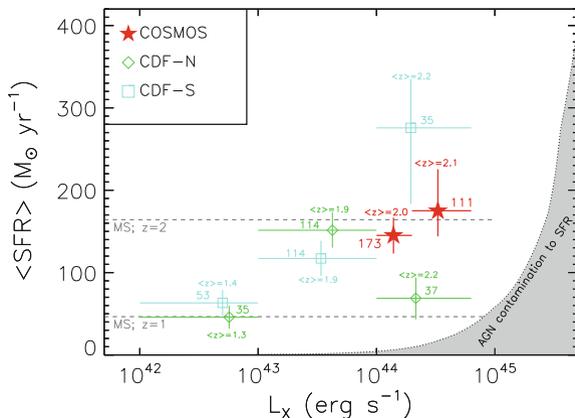


Fig. 6.3 Mean SFR versus L_X for AGN in the three fields (see Sect. 6.4 for details). We indicate the number of, and the average redshift of, the AGN in each bin (Table 6.1). The *dotted curve* indicates the contamination to the measured SFR from AGN activity (i.e., the amount that the SFRs will be boosted by due to contamination of the $250\ \mu\text{m}$ flux [rest-frame $83\ \mu\text{m}$ at $z = 2$] by AGN activity) and is calculated using the L_X - L_{MIR} relation of Gandhi et al. (2009) and the intrinsic AGN SED of Mullaney et al. (2011). The *dashed lines* show the average SFR expected (derived from Elbaz et al. 2011) for a galaxy with a stellar mass of $9 \times 10^{10} M_\odot$ (i.e., about the mean stellar mass of X-ray detected AGN hosts; e.g., Xue et al. 2010; Mullaney et al. 2012a). We find that the mean SFR distribution at $L_X > 10^{42} \text{ erg s}^{-1}$ is roughly equal to that expected from typical star-forming galaxies at the average redshifts of our bins (our $L_X < 10^{43} \text{ erg s}^{-1}$ bins have lower mean redshifts and hence lower mean SFRs; e.g., Mullaney et al. 2012a). We show that there are variations in the measured mean SFRs between the small CDF-N and CDF-S fields and argue that this, combined with low number statistics drive the Page et al. (2012) results shown in Fig. 6.2

In contrast to the lower X-ray luminosity systems, the mean SFRs of AGN between CDF-N and CDF-S appears to diverge at the highest X-ray luminosities (i.e., $L_X > 10^{44} \text{ erg s}^{-1}$). We note that the higher mean SFR observed for high L_X AGN in the CDF-S is broadly consistent with the results found by Lutz et al. (2010) and Rovilos et al. (2012) in the same field. Despite these field-to-field variations the mean SFRs in the CDF-S and CDF-N fields are consistent with that found in the COSMOS field (within $\approx 1\sigma$ and $\approx 3\sigma$ respectively).

6.5.1 Discussion

The results that we have presented indicate the luminous AGN have star formation rates that are consistent with the overall star-forming galaxy population at the same redshift and with the same masses. Even for the most luminous source that we have observed, our results indicate that the presence of a powerful AGN has no effect on the *observed* star formation rate. These results may seem to be in contradiction with theoretical models of galaxy evolution that predict that luminous AGN *suppress* the

star formation in their host galaxies. We therefore need to assess if the lack of an observed reduction in star formation rates for the most powerful AGN is evidence that these models are incorrect.

Under the assumption that luminous AGN activity *does* result in the suppression of star formation in the host galaxies, the ability to simultaneously observe this luminous AGN and a reduced star formation rate will depend on the relative timescales of the processes involved. For example, if the time between the onset of luminous AGN activity and the shut down of star formation is longer than the AGN lifetime itself (which may indeed be highly variable; e.g., Novak et al. 2011) then it would be challenging to observe significantly reduced mean SFRs, simply on the basis of an AGN luminosity threshold. In this scenario the AGN may no longer be visible, or at least still be very luminous, by the time the star formation rates have been lowered/suppressed. Therefore, under this scenario, the methods adopted here would never reveal the signatures of AGN suppressing star formation.

To make progress in this area would require an excellent understanding of the timescales of luminous AGN activity and the timescale of star formation suppression. However, these are still very uncertain. Whilst some modelling suggests that episodes of the most luminous AGN activity last < 80 Myrs (Hopkins et al. 2005; Novak et al. 2011), studies based on black hole mass functions and AGN luminosity functions imply that luminous AGN activity could last in excess of $\approx 10^8$ years (e.g. Marconi et al. 2004; Kelly et al. 2010; Cao 2010). AGN-driven outflows are the primary candidate for rapidly shutting down star formation. However, whilst these outflows have been observed, their long-term impact upon the host galaxies and only be indirectly estimated. Observations of AGN-driven $\approx 1000 \text{ km s}^{-1}$ outflows, found over kilo-parsec scales in $z \approx 1-3$ ultra-luminous infrared galaxies (ULIRGs; Harrison et al. 2012a) indicate that star-formation episodes could be rapidly shut down and detailed studies of local ULIRGs with AGN-driven molecular outflows indicate that their gas reservoirs could be completely removed in $\approx 1-40$ Myrs (e.g., Feruglio et al. 2010; Sturm et al. 2011). However, it is not possible to confirm the effect of these outflows in individual galaxies. Clearer signatures of suppressed star formation may be more apparent when considering subsets of the AGN population which may represent specific evolutionary stages (e.g., Page et al. 2004; Stevens et al. 2005).

To summarise, we find no evidence for the significantly reduced mean SFRs among high luminosity AGN, and the mean SFRs measured are consistent with that expected from typical star-forming galaxies at the average redshifts and typical stellar masses of our bins. We have suggested that, depending on the timescales involved, it could be challenging to see the signature of suppressed star formation simply on the basis of an X-ray luminosity threshold.

References

- Aird, J., Nandra, K., Laird, E. S., et al. 2010, *MNRAS*, 401, 2531
- Alexander, D. M., Bauer, F. E., Brandt, W. N., et al. 2003, *AJ*, 126, 539
- Booth, C. M., & Schaye, J. 2010, *MNRAS*, 405, L1
- Bower, R. G., Benson, A. J., Malbon, R., et al. 2006, *MNRAS*, 370, 645
- Brandt, W. N., & Hasinger, G. 2005, *ARAA*, 43, 827
- Cao, X. 2010, *ApJ*, 725, 388
- Chary, R., & Elbaz, D. 2001, *ApJ*, 556, 562
- Civano, F., Elvis, M., Brusa, M., et al. 2012, *APJS*, 201, 30
- Daddi, E., Dickinson, M., Morrison, G., et al. 2007, *ApJ*, 670, 156
- Debuhr, J., Quataert, E., & Ma, C.-P. 2012, *MNRAS*, 420, 2221
- Di Matteo, T., Springel, V., & Hernquist, L. 2005, *Nature*, 433, 604
- Elbaz, D., Daddi, E., Le Borgne, D., et al. 2007, *A&A*, 468, 33
- Elbaz, D., Hwang, H. S., Magnelli, B., et al. 2010, *A&A*, 518, L29
- Elbaz, D., Dickinson, M., Hwang, H. S., et al. 2011, *A&A*, 533, A119
- Elvis, M., Civano, F., Vignali, C., et al. 2009, *APJS*, 184, 158
- Feruglio, C., Maiolino, R., Piconcelli, E., et al. 2010, *A&A*, 518, L155
- Gandhi, P., Horst, H., Smette, A., et al. 2009, *A&A*, 502, 457
- Harrison, C. M., Alexander, D. M., Swinbank, A. M., et al. 2012a, *MNRAS*, 426, 1073
- Harrison, C. M., Alexander, D. M., Mullaney, J. R., et al. 2012b, *ApJL*, 760, L15
- Hatziminaoglou, E., Omont, A., Stevens, J. A., et al. 2010, *A&A*, 518, L33
- Heckman, T. M., Kauffmann, G., Brinchmann, J., et al. 2004, *ApJ*, 613, 109
- Hopkins, P. F., Hernquist, L., Cox, T. J., et al. 2005, *ApJ*, 630, 716
- Kelly, B. C., Vestergaard, M., Fan, X., et al. 2010, *ApJ*, 719, 1315
- Kennicutt, Jr., R. C. 1998, *ARAA*, 36, 189
- Kormendy, J., & Richstone, D. 1995, *ARAA*, 33, 581
- Lutz, D., Mainieri, V., Rafferty, D., et al. 2010, *ApJ*, 712, 1287
- Magorrian, J., Tremaine, S., Richstone, D., et al. 1998, *AJ*, 115, 2285
- Mainieri, V., Bongiorno, A., Merloni, A., et al. 2011, *A & A*, 535, A80
- Marconi, A., Risaliti, G., Gilli, R., et al. 2004, *MNRAS*, 351, 169
- Merloni, A. 2004, *MNRAS*, 353, 1035
- Mullaney, J. R., Alexander, D. M., Goulding, A. D., & Hickox, R. C. 2011, *MNRAS*, 414, 1082
- Mullaney, J. R., Alexander, D. M., Huynh, M., Goulding, A. D., & Frayer, D. 2010, *MNRAS*, 401, 995
- Mullaney, J. R., Pannella, M., Daddi, E., et al. 2012a, *MNRAS*, 419, 95
- Mullaney, J. R., Daddi, E., Béthermin, M., et al. 2012b, *ApJL*, 753, L30
- Noeske, K. G., Weiner, B. J., Faber, S. M., et al. 2007, *ApJL*, 660, L43
- Novak, G. S., Ostriker, J. P., & Ciotti, L. 2011, *ApJ*, 737, 26
- Oliver, S. J., Bock, J., Altieri, B., et al. 2012, *MNRAS*, 424, 1614
- Page, M. J., Stevens, J. A., Ivison, R. J., & Carrera, F. J. 2004, *ApJL*, 611, L85
- Page, M. J., Symeonidis, M., Vieira, J. D., et al. 2012, *Nature*, 485, 213
- Pannella, M., Carilli, C. L., Daddi, E., et al. 2009, *ApJL*, 698, L116
- Rosario, D. J., Santini, P., Lutz, D., et al. 2012, *A&A*, 545, A45
- Rovilos, E., Comastri, A., Gilli, R., et al. 2012, *A&A*, 546, A58
- Santini, P., Rosario, D. J., Shao, L., et al. 2012, *A&A*, 540, A109
- Shao, L., Lutz, D., Nordon, R., et al. 2010, *A&A*, 518, L26
- Stevens, J. A., Page, M. J., Ivison, R. J., et al. 2005, *MNRAS*, 360, 610
- Sturm, E., González-Alfonso, E., Veilleux, S., et al. 2011, *ApJL*, 733, L16
- Xue, Y. Q., Brandt, W. N., Luo, B., et al. 2010, *ApJ*, 720, 368
- Xue, Y. Q., Luo, B., Brandt, W. N., et al. 2011, *APJS*, 195, 10

Chapter 7

Conclusions

This thesis has presented observational experiments to address theoretical predictions on the influence of AGN on the evolution of galaxies. This chapter summarises the main results from the work presented in this thesis and the main outstanding issues that are still to be addressed. On-going and future projects, to address these outstanding issues are described, along with some of the preliminary results, in the following chapter.

This thesis has placed observational constraints on the influence of AGN on the evolution of galaxies by studying bolometrically luminous AGN (i.e., $L_{\text{AGN}} \gtrsim 10^{43} \text{ erg s}^{-1}$). Luminous AGN are predicted to be capable of driving galaxy-wide outflows that can influence the evolution of their host galaxies by suppressing or enhancing star formation and driving gas out into the larger scale environment (see Sect. 1.5). In this thesis the prevalence and properties of galaxy-wide outflows have been explored as well as searching for observational evidence that luminous AGN are suppressing star formation in their host galaxies. The main results are summarised below.

7.1 The Identification and Characterisation of Galaxy-Wide Outflows in ULIRGs Hosting AGN Activity

Chapter 3 presented IFU observations of eight high-redshift ($z = 1.4\text{--}3.4$) ULIRGs that host AGN activity to search for and to characterise galaxy-wide ionised outflows. High-redshift ULIRGs are galaxies that are believed to be progenitors of today's massive elliptical galaxies. The sources were selected from a sample of known ULIRG/AGN composite galaxies that show broad and luminous emission-lines in their one-dimensional spectra. In the four systems with the highest quality data the signatures of large-scale energetic outflows were identified: extremely broad [O III]

emission lines (FWHM $\approx 700\text{--}1400\text{ km s}^{-1}$) across $\approx 4\text{--}15\text{ kpc}$, with high velocity offsets from the systemic redshifts (up to $\approx 850\text{ km s}^{-1}$). It was estimated that these outflows are depositing energy into their host galaxies at considerable rates ($\dot{E} \approx 10^{43}\text{--}10^{45}\text{ erg s}^{-1}$). Based on the measured maximum velocities ($v_{\text{max}} \approx 400\text{--}1400\text{ km s}^{-1}$) the outflows observed are likely to unbind some fraction of the gas from their host galaxies, but are unlikely to completely remove gas from the galaxy halos. The galaxies observed here are two to three orders of magnitude more common than the extreme high-redshift radio galaxies that are often associated with powerful large-scale outflows at high redshift. Fundamentally, these outflows may represent a crucial phase in the evolution of massive galaxies.

7.2 Galaxy-Wide Outflows in the Context of the Overall AGN Population

Chapter 4 presented IFU observations of sixteen $z < 0.2$ type 2 AGN to search for and to characterise galaxy-wide ionised outflows. An important advantage of this work, over previous work, is that the targets were selected from a well constrained parent sample of $\approx 24,000$ AGN, which means that the observations can be placed into the context of the overall AGN population. The sixteen sources were selected to be luminous ($L_{[\text{O III}]}$ $> 5 \times 10^{41}\text{ erg s}^{-1}$) and have a broad [O III] emission-line component, based on the fitting to their one-dimensional spectra by Mullaney et al. (2013). A ‘‘broad component’’ was defined as a component with FWHM $> 700\text{ km s}^{-1}$ and that contributes at least 30% of the total emission-line flux. Using the parent sample, it was shown that $45 \pm 3\%$ of the AGN in this luminosity and redshift range have broad components. High-velocity ionised gas (velocity widths $\approx 600\text{--}1500\text{ km s}^{-1}$ and maximum velocities $\leq 1700\text{ km s}^{-1}$) with observed spatial extents of $\gtrsim 6\text{--}16\text{ kpc}$ was found in all of the IFU targets. It was shown that the targets are representative of $z < 0.2$, luminous (i.e., $L_{[\text{O III}]}$ $> 10^{41.7}\text{ erg s}^{-1}$) type 2 AGN and that ionised outflows are not only common but also that they are extended over kiloparsec scales in $\geq 70\%$ (3σ confidence) of cases. The morphologies of the emission-line regions and outflows were explored. Overall, the results show that galaxy-wide ionised outflows are an extremely common feature in galaxies that host luminous AGN. By applying some simple outflow models we estimate that the mass outflow rates are high (typically $\approx 10\times$ the SFRs), indicating that these outflows have the potential to deplete the gas supply for future star formation in their host galaxies. Furthermore, the calculated estimates imply outflow kinetic energies ($\approx 0.5\text{--}10\%$ of L_{AGN}) and momentum rates (typically $\gtrsim [10\text{--}20] \times L_{\text{AGN}}/c$) consistent with theoretical models that predict that AGN-driven outflows play a significant role in shaping the evolution of galaxies.

7.3 Observations to Understand the Relationship Between Radio Emission and Outflows

Chapter 5 presented a pilot study of combining high spatial resolution radio data with IFU data for one optically luminous, radio-quiet AGN, selected from the parent sample of $z < 0.4$ optical AGN described in Chap. 4. The aim of this study was to make detailed observations to understand what is driving the relationship between moderate-to-high radio luminosities and the high velocity ionised gas kinematics that has been observed in the one dimensional optical spectra of AGN. In this chapter we presented multi-frequency (1–8 GHz), multi-spatial resolution (≈ 0.3 –1 arcsec) VLA data, combined with *HST* imaging and VLA-VIMOS IFU data of the Teacup AGN. We observed bi-polar “bubbles” of radio emission extending ≈ 10 –12 kpc centred at the AGN nucleus. The edge of the brighter radio bubbles is co-spatial with an arc of luminous ionised gas. Additionally, we observed a compact jet-like structure ≈ 0.8 kpc at the base of the brightest bubble. This radio structure is co-spatial with a high-velocity ionised outflow ($v = -740 \text{ km s}^{-1}$). These observations demonstrated that this source is capable of interacting with the interstellar medium on small (≈ 1 kpc) and large (≈ 10 kpc) scales. Our observations revealed that, even when an object is formally “radio quiet” and a luminous quasar, there may be a significant level of *mechanical* energy input.

7.4 Searching for Observational Evidence That Luminous AGN Suppress Star Formation

Chapter 6 presented results from stacking $250 \mu\text{m}$ *Herschel* photometric data at the positions of ≈ 700 $z = 1$ –3 X-ray detected AGN. The average $250 \mu\text{m}$ luminosities were used, derived from the stacks, as a proxy for the SFRs of the AGN host galaxies to investigate the average SFRs as a function of X-ray luminosity. Earlier published work had provided contradictory results on the SFRs of the most luminous AGN (i.e., $L_{2-8 \text{ keV}} \gtrsim 10^{44} \text{ erg s}^{-1}$). In particular a result presented in *Nature* claimed evidence for the suppression of star formation by luminous AGN, in apparent contradiction with most earlier work. In this work the contradictory results were reconciled by showing that they are likely to be a result of small number statistics and field-to-field variations. Overall, it was found that the mean SFRs of AGN are constant over a broad X-ray luminosity range of $L_{2-8 \text{ keV}} \approx 10^{43}$ – $10^{45} \text{ erg s}^{-1}$, with mean SFRs that are consistent with typical star-forming galaxies at $z \approx 2$ (i.e., $\langle \text{SFRs} \rangle \approx 100$ – $200 M_{\odot} \text{ yr}^{-1}$). Therefore, on the basis of this analysis, no strong evidence for suppressed star formation in luminous AGN at $z \approx 1$ –3 was found. The implications of these results were discussed and it was suggested that due to the different timescales of luminous AGN activity and star formation episodes, it could be challenging to see the signature of suppressed star formation simply on the basis of an X-ray luminosity threshold.

7.5 Overall Summary and Outstanding Issues

The work in this thesis has demonstrated that energetic galaxy-wide ionised outflows are a common feature of luminous AGN (Chaps. 3 and 4). Firstly, they have been shown to exist in high-redshift ULIRGs that host AGN, which are galaxies thought to represent a key phase in the evolution of galaxies. By using a large sample of low redshift AGN it was also demonstrated that galaxy-wide ionised outflows are prevalent in luminous AGN. Importantly, all of the targets studied in this thesis were chosen to be more representative of the overall luminous AGN population compared to the objects studied in the majority of previous work. The estimated outflow properties (i.e., energetics and mass outflows rates) imply that the outflows could have a significant influence on the evolution of their host galaxies; however, measuring the properties of the outflows using tracers of other gas phases, in addition to the warm ionised gas traced here, will tighten these constraints (discussed in the next section). If the observed outflows are AGN driven, they provide a mechanism for an AGN to directly impact upon the evolution of their host galaxies, in-line with some predictions from models of galaxy evolution. Whilst these results provide tentative evidence that the most powerful outflows are located in AGN host-galaxies (Chap. 3) and that AGN seem to be more energetically viable at driving the outflows compared to star formation (Chaps. 3 and 4) these results do not yet conclusively determine which process drives the outflows. In apparent *contradiction* with some theoretical predictions, no evidence was found to indicate that luminous AGN have suppressed SFRs compared to the overall star-forming galaxy population (Chap. 6). It is clear that there is a requirement to have strong observational constraints on which mechanisms drive galaxy-wide outflows in luminous AGN and what long-term impact these outflows have on the evolution of galaxies. In the following Chap. 8 outline some ongoing and future projects that are designed to address these issues.

Reference

Mullaney, J. R., Alexander, D. M., Fine, S., et al. 2013, MNRAS, 433, 622

Chapter 8

Ongoing and Future Work

The work in this thesis has resulted in significant progress in placing observational constraints on the influence of AGN on the evolution of galaxies. However, as outlined in the previous chapter, there are outstanding questions that still need to be addressed. As a result of the work presented in this thesis, a number of follow-up observational projects are now underway to answer some of these questions. In this chapter we consider four of the key questions and provide an overview of the new work that is now underway to answer them. These questions are: (1) what physical processes drive the outflows in AGN?; (2) what are the multi gas-phase properties of galaxy-wide outflows?; (3) what is the prevalence of ionised outflows in galaxies across cosmic time?; and (4) what impact do outflows have on galaxy evolution? We finish this chapter with some final remarks on the status of the research that has been covered in this thesis.

8.1 What Physical Processes Drive the Outflows in AGN?

A key question to answer is what physical process (or processes) drive the galaxy-wide outflows that have been observed in the host galaxies of the luminous AGN studied in this thesis (i.e., Chaps. 3 and 4) and those studied in other work? Possibilities include stellar or supernovae winds, radio jets and AGN accretion-disc winds. Indirect methods were used in this thesis to make a first attempt to answer this question (e.g., by estimating the energetics in the outflows compared to the energetic output of the AGN, star formation and possible radio jets); however, more direct methods would be preferable. A few of my ongoing projects, which are designed to move towards answering this question, are described below.

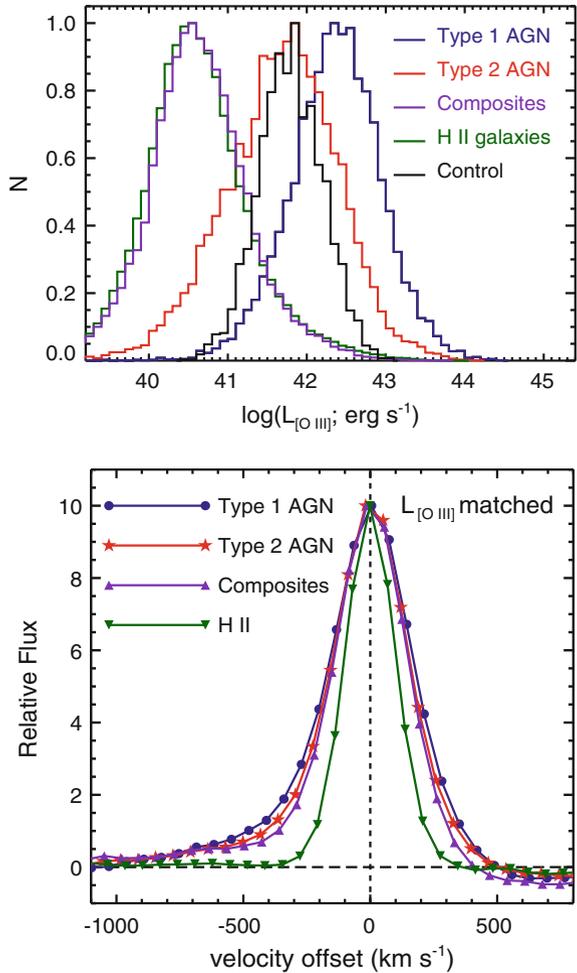
In Chap. 4 we introduced a survey of $\approx 24,000$ $z < 0.4$ AGN (Mullaney et al. 2013). This systematic study of the optical spectra of these sources is a very effective tool for understanding the prevalence of ionised outflows in the population of AGN

as a whole. In this thesis, we have used this survey to target follow-up observations in detail using IFU and radio data. However, a limitation of this survey is that it only investigated galaxies which host an AGN based on optical diagnostics. To fully understand the whole galaxy population, and to truly determine if AGN are responsible for the most extreme outflows, it is also important to consider galaxies which *do not* host an AGN.

To consider the galaxy population as a whole, rather than just those which host AGN, there are two obvious questions to ask: (1) how representative are our observations of the overall *galaxy* population and (2) are outflows more (or less) prevalent in galaxies that host an AGN? As an initial test of these questions, I took the $\approx 240,000$ $z < 0.4$ extragalactic sources from the SDSS DR7 spectroscopic catalogue that met the original selection criteria of Mullaney et al. (2013) (i.e., the sources that are detected in [O III], H α , H β and [N II]). Using the standard BPT diagram (Fig. 1.3), in combination with the H α emission-line widths, I classified the objects as type 1 AGN, type 2 AGN, composites or H II galaxies (see Kewley et al. 2006 and Sect. 1.2.3 for details of these classification methods). [O III] luminosity matched samples were then constructed (see caption in Fig. 8.1) and the spectra were stacked around the [O III] $\lambda 5007$ emission line. These stacks are shown in Fig. 8.1 and the pre-liminary conclusion is that the non-AGN host galaxies (i.e., the H II galaxies) do not show strong features of ionised outflows when compared to the AGN (i.e., on average they do not show the broad high-velocity wings in the emission-line profiles that are observed in the AGN). This may mean that AGN are required to drive the most powerful ionised outflows. Following Mullaney et al. (2013) we now intend to perform detailed emission-line profile decomposition on the full galaxy parent sample. We will use this parent sample to assess how common outflows features are across the galaxy population and to perform similar follow-up experiments to that performed in Chap. 4. The provisional programme name is GALPAKA (Galaxy and AGN Line Profile And Kinematic Analysis; see Fig. 8.6).

Radio data will provide a crucial role in determining the driving mechanisms of ionised outflows. Radio jets and star formation have been proposed as plausible driving mechanisms for high-velocity outflows and high spatial resolution radio data provides the opportunity to test these ideas. We already demonstrated the power of these data in Chap. 5, with our study of the Teacup AGN. The initial results implied that radio jets may be playing a critical role. Furthermore, we showed that this could be a radio-quiet analogue of the powerful radio-galaxies which exhibit radio jets interacting with gas on scales of tens of kiloparsec (e.g., Villar-Martín et al. 1999; Tadhunter et al. 2000; Solórzano-Iñarrea and Tadhunter 2003; Nesvadba et al. 2006, 2008). This provided some of the most direct evidence for how a luminous AGN (i.e., $L_{\text{AGN}} = 10^{45.3} \text{ erg s}^{-1}$), with a *moderate* radio luminosity (i.e., $L_{1.4\text{GHz}} = 10^{23.7} \text{ W Hz}^{-1}$) interacts with its host galaxy and larger scale environment over $\approx 10\text{--}20 \text{ kpc}$ scales. However, this is only one object and therefore is limited in what you can determine about the population as a whole. I have been awarded time on the radio interferometers VLA (Project ID: VLA/13B-127; PI: Harrison)

Fig. 8.1 *Upper* Normalised [O III] luminosity distributions for the $z < 0.4$ emission-line galaxies investigated here that have been grouped using the classifications: type 1 AGN; type 2 AGN; composites; H II galaxies. Also shown is a “control” distribution that I used to create [O III] luminosity matched samples from each group. I randomly selected 2500 sources from each group such that they have the same luminosity distribution as the “control” distribution. *Lower* Stacks of the spectra in the luminosity-matched random samples from each group around the [O III] λ 5007 emission line. These initial results suggest that, on average, the H II galaxies do not show a luminous high-velocity prominent wing, which could indicate that they do not contain as prominent ionised outflows compared to the galaxies that host AGN



and e-MERLIN (Project ID: CY1022 and CY2217; PI: Harrison) to observe all of the objects identified as having galaxy-wide outflows in Chap. 4 of this thesis. Following on from Chap. 5, these radio observations will be used to search for emission associated with radio jets and star formation and their spatial distribution will be compared to the structures of the outflows that were have observed in the full sample. In Fig. 8.2 we show five more example objects, to demonstrate the power of combining high-resolution radio data with IFU data. We are finding a high prevalence of radio-jet features in these systems, which may be the first evidence that mechanical energy input is much more significant in quasars than previously predicted by most theoretical models.

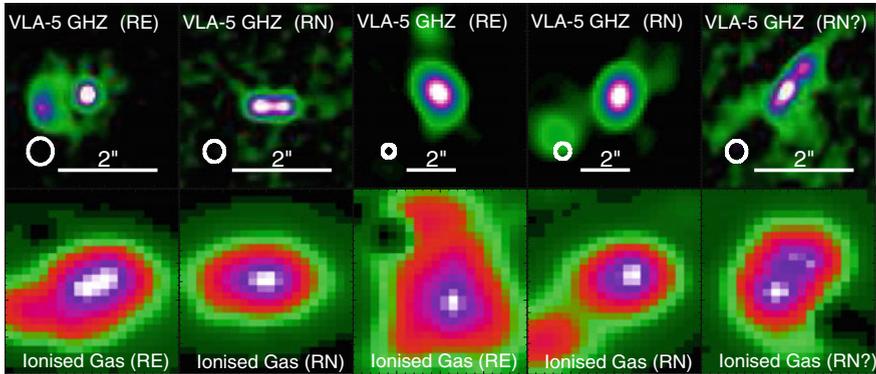


Fig. 8.2 Example 5GHz maps from our VLA run observing radio-quiet quasars (*top row*). The *bottom row* shows our [O III] surface brightness maps for these targets (Chap. 4). There is a direct connection between the spatial distribution of the ionised gas and the radio emission in all sources. The quasars show spectral slopes and morphologies that are consistent with AGN jets/cores and, combined with the ionised gas measurements, reveal significant mechanical energy injection in these quasars (also see Chap. 5). This is in contention with some predictions of AGN feedback models and the origin of radio emission in quasars

To further explore the connection between radio emission and ionised outflows in galaxies we have been awarded time on WHT/ISIS (Project ID: W/2015B/7; PI: Harrison). This programme to measure the spatially-resolved gas kinematics of 15 of the quasars selected from the GALPAKA galaxies (described above) that show a range of radio properties. We will observe five galaxies classed as “radio normal”, five classed as “radio excess” and five classed as “radio extreme” based on their q_{IR} parameter (see Sect. 4.3.3). These targets are shown in a q_{IR} versus redshift plot in Fig. 8.3. In Chap. 4 we found tentative evidence that “radio excess” sources, i.e., those which are most likely to host radio emission due to radio jets or shocks, show the most extended and disturbed emission-line regions. These new data will be used to test this result on a larger sample. We have now also proposed for VLA observations of these targets. Overall these extensive programs will determine the impact (or lack there-of) of radio jets on the ionised gas kinematics in quasars and, crucially, provide estimates of the mechanical energy input in these systems.

Several theoretical models predict that AGN-driven winds, initially launched close to the accretion disk, propagate into the host galaxy and become galaxy-wide outflows (e.g., King 2003; Faucher-Giguère and Quataert 2012). Although both sub-parsec scale outflows and galaxy-wide outflows have been observed in AGN, there is currently no strong observational evidence that indicates that the outflows identified on these two spatial scales are directly related. In a first attempt to address this, I was awarded time on the IFU instruments Gemini-North/GMOS (Prog. ID: GN-2012B-Q-246; PI: Harrison) and VLT/VIMOS: (Prog. ID: 090.B-0060[A]; PI: Harrison) to observe five $z \approx 0.5$ broad absorption-line quasars (BALQSOs). BALQSOs exhibit broad and high-velocity ($v \approx 0.01\text{--}0.1c$; e.g., Weymann et al. 1991) absorption-line

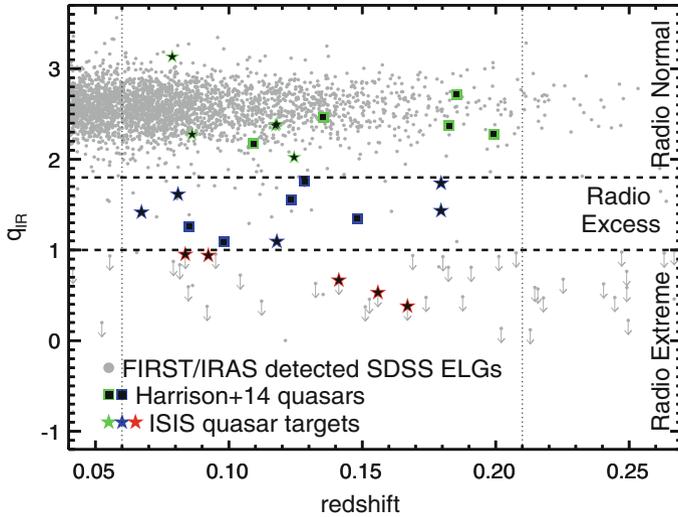


Fig. 8.3 Radio excess parameter, versus z for SDSS emission-line galaxies in GALPAKA. Sources with $q_{\text{IR}} < 1.8$ are classified “radio excess” (i.e., radio emission above star formation processes; e.g., radio jets, shocks). We have classified sources with $q_{\text{IR}} < 1$ as “radio extreme”. The *squares* show the ten quasars, with a measured q_{IR} value, from Chap. 4. The *stars* indicate the quasar targets for ISIS, for which we will obtain spatially-resolved spectroscopy. By selecting five of each “radio normal”, “radio excess” and “radio extreme”, we will be able to measure the spatially-resolved ionised gas properties (e.g., morphology, sizes and outflow energetics etc.) as a function of q_{IR}

features in their spectra that are associated with accretion-disk winds on sub-parsec scales. The IFU data will be used to search for and to characterise galaxy-wide ionised outflows following the analyses outlined in Chaps. 3 and 4. I will compare the properties of any observed galaxy-wide outflows to the properties of the high-velocity small-scale outflows that can be characterised using the broad absorption lines.

8.2 What Are the Multi Gas-Phase Properties of Galaxy-Wide Outflows?

The observations of the outflows in this thesis have studied the warm ($T \approx 10^4$ K) ionised gas that can be traced by rest-frame optical emission lines (e.g., $[\text{O III}]\lambda 5007$ and $\text{H}\beta$). As demonstrated in Chap. 4, one clear advantage of tracing outflows in this gas phase, over other gas phases, is that large statistical spectroscopic surveys, such as the SDSS, can be exploited to understand the overall population. However, galaxy-wide outflows are likely to consist of multiple gas phases (i.e., warm ionised, hot ionised, atomic and molecular). Observations of all gas phases are required to

build up a full picture of the total mass and energy involved in these outflows. In turn this then helps address the overall impact that these outflows will have on their host galaxies.

I was awarded time on the IRAM-30m telescope to observe the CO(1–0) emission lines for six of the objects studied in Chap. 4 (Prog. ID: 083-13; PI: Harrison). The CO(1–0) emission-line can be used as a tracer of the molecular gas. This programme was designed to trace the total molecular gas mass in the objects and to constrain the level of outflowing molecular gas. A direct comparison could then be made to the properties of the outflowing ionised gas. Unfortunately the observing run was scheduled for a week that had appalling weather conditions, such that most ($\approx 90\%$) of the data were unusable and the rest were of low quality. Figure 8.4 shows the small fraction of usable data from the project that resulted in a detection of two of the objects observed. There is tentative evidence that the molecular gas could reach velocities comparable to that observed in the ionised gas (see Fig. 8.4). Interferometers such as IRAM/PdBI and ALMA provide other opportunities to observe the CO emission lines in these or other sources, with the added benefit of providing spatial information. I will continue to apply for time to search for and characterise molecular outflows.

X-ray observations provide the possibility of tracing the properties of the hot (i.e., $T \gtrsim 10^6$ K) ionised gas. This gas phase may make up a large component of any observed outflows. Furthermore, X-ray observations, in combination with radio observations, have been used to show that radio jets are preventing the cooling of hot gas in the halos of AGN (discussed in Sect. 1.5; review in McNamara and Nulsen 2012). Therefore, a sensible step forward is to obtain X-ray measurements of the sources in our programme. Towards this, we obtained Director’s Discretionary Time on the X-ray instrument *SWIFT*-XRT to observe the Teacup AGN, for which we presented radio and IFU data in Chap. 5. From these data we extracted an X-ray spectrum that we show in Fig. 8.5. The data show a very steep ($\Gamma \approx 3.5$) soft component at $\lesssim 2$ keV and a flat hard component at $\gtrsim 2$ keV. This hard component is most likely to be produced by the central AGN. However, the soft component could be produced by a number of processes including photo-ionization or thermally by hot gas. To distinguish between the various possibilities, and make detailed measurements of the properties of this gas, requires spatially-resolved X-ray data (on $\approx 1''$) and higher signal-to-noise observations. This can only be achieved with the *Chandra* X-ray observatory. We have now been awarded time on *Chandra* to observe the Teacup AGN (Cycle 17, Project ID:17700304; PI: Harrison). Using these observations we will: (1) measure the level of obscuration and the intrinsic power of the central AGN; (2) search for hot X-ray emitting gas associated with the observed outflows; (3) establish if there is X-ray emission associated with the radio lobes so that we can further characterise their properties. This will serve as a preliminary experiment with the long-term goal of obtaining X-ray observations of the full sample of objects that is presented in Chap. 4.

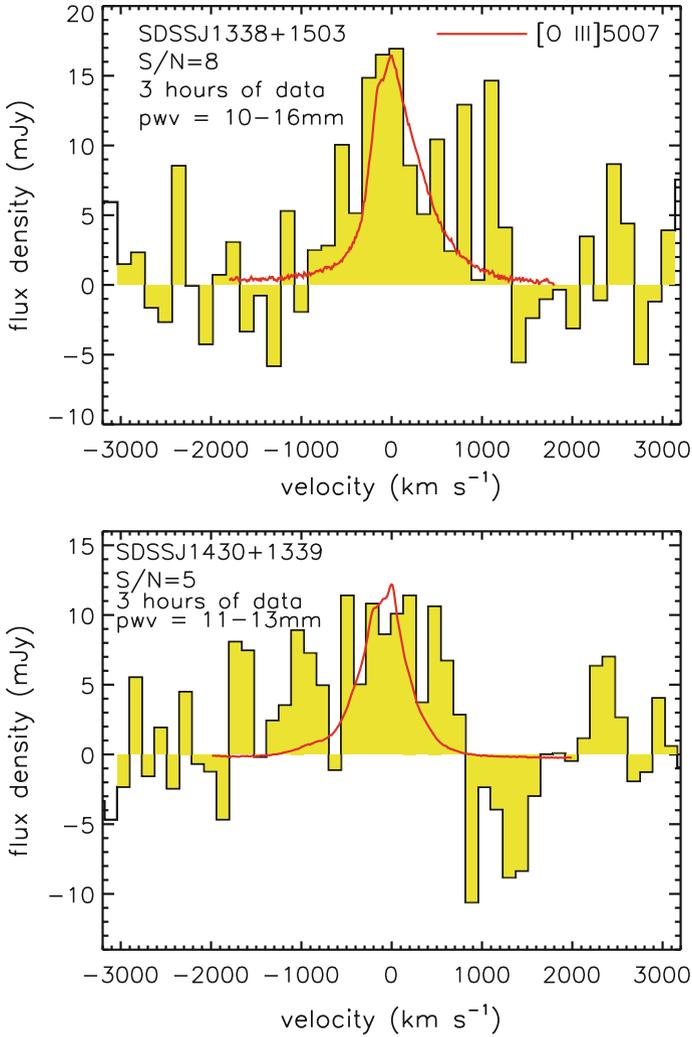


Fig. 8.4 Data from the IRAM-30m programme to observe the CO(1–0) emission-line profiles of the type 2 AGN studied in Chap. 4 of this thesis. Only a small fraction ($\approx 10\%$) of the data was usable and no data was taken under the requested conditions due to poor weather during the observing run. The CO(1–0) emission lines for two of the targets are shown (yellow-filled histograms) with the [O III] $\lambda 5007$ emission lines overlaid (red curves). There is tentative evidence that, in at least SDSSJ1338+1503, there is molecular gas [traced by the CO(1–0) emission-line profile] with velocities comparable to that seen in the ionised gas (traced by the [O III] $\lambda 5007$ emission-line profile)

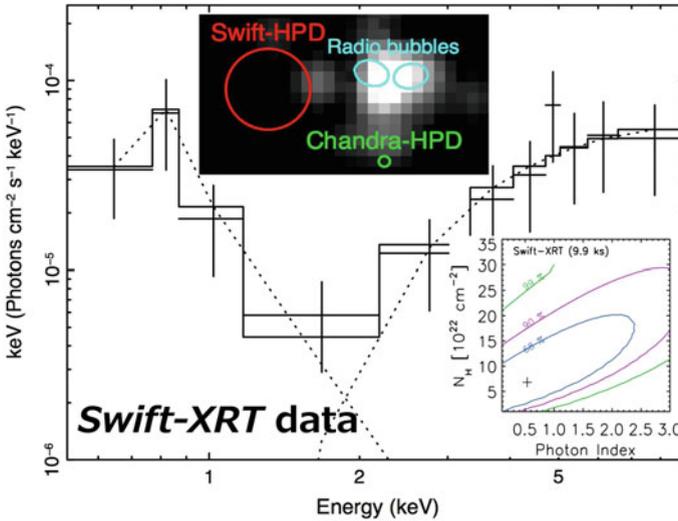


Fig. 8.5 Our *Swift*-XRT data of the Teacup AGN. The main panel is the 0.5–10 keV spectrum, fitted with an absorbed-power law component (fixed $\Gamma = 1.8$) and a thermal plasma component to model the soft, <2 keV, emission (*dotted curves*). The inset image is the smoothed XRT data; the central ellipses represent the sizes of the radio bubbles (see Fig. 5.1), the *large circle* shows the XRT HPD ($\approx 18''$) and the *small circle* shows the *Chandra* HPD ($\approx 1''$). We have now been awarded time on *Chandra* to observe this source. *Chandra* is the only facility with sufficient spatial resolution to compare the distribution of the X-ray emission to the radio bubbles and warm ionized gas (i.e., on $\lesssim 15''$)

8.3 What Is the Prevalence of Ionised Outflows in Galaxies Across Cosmic Time?

The project outlined above is to study the prevalence of ionised outflows in low redshift galaxies (i.e., $z < 0.4$). Whilst this provides the benefit of pre-existing spectroscopic surveys and any follow-up observations will have high signal-to-noise and spatial resolution, this does not cover the peak epoch of galaxy and BH growth where AGN-driven outflows and rapid modes of AGN feedback are predicted to be most prevalent (i.e., $z \approx 0.5\text{--}3$; discussed in Sect. 1.5). Although galaxy-wide outflows were observed in $z \approx 1\text{--}3$ AGN in Chap. 3, there was not have a good handle on how representative these observations are of the overall high-redshift galaxy and AGN population. This is primarily due to the absence of systematic spectroscopic surveys of high-redshift galaxies (i.e., $z \gtrsim 0.5$). However, I am addressing this by using the newly commissioned KMOS instrument on ESO/VLT (see Fig. 8.6). This instrument provides the opportunity to observe with 24 NIR IFUs simultaneously inside a 7 arc minute field-of-view. I am involved in the Durham guaranteed time project (PI: Sharples and Alexander) to measure the ionised gas kinematics of ≈ 1000 distant galaxies and AGN. Galaxy-wide ionised outflows will be searched for and

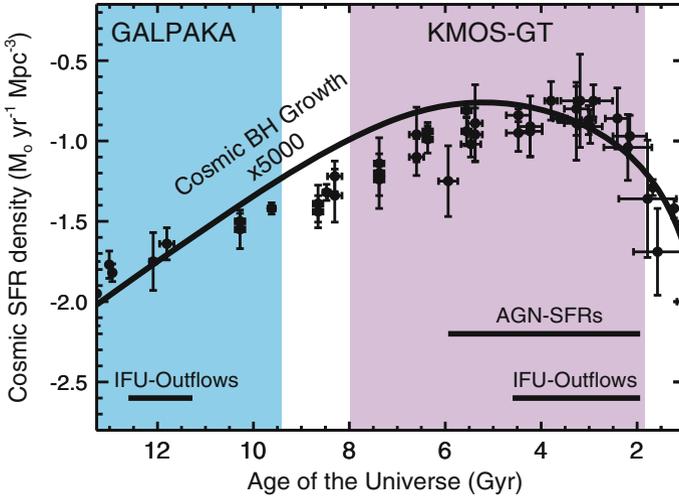


Fig. 8.6 Volume-averaged star formation rate (SFR) density (circles; Madau and Dickinson 2014) and black-hole (BH) growth (curve; Aird et al. 2010) versus age of the Universe. The labelled *solid lines* show the epochs covered by the observations described in this thesis. The shaded regions show the epochs covered by the major parent samples that will be used for future programmes. GALPAKA provides a sample of nearby galaxies that can be studied in exquisite detail, whilst the KMOS guaranteed time (GT) programme covers the epoch where AGN activity and star formation were occurring at much higher levels

characterised (i.e., by measuring spatial extents and energetics) following similar methods to those used in this thesis.

One aspect of the KMOS guaranteed time project is the KMOS AGN Survey at High- z (KASH z). KASH z is designed to obtain emission-line kinematics of ≈ 200 high-redshift ($z \approx 0.6\text{--}3.6$) AGN. The aim is to measure host galaxy and outflow dynamics by using the ionised gas tracers of H α , [O III], H β , [N II] and/or [S II]. By observing large samples, we can follow a similar approach to that presented for the $z < 0.4$ sample presented in Chap. 4 and assess the ionised gas kinematics in the context of the overall AGN population. This survey will also provide a useful data set to place previous IFS observations of a few high- z AGN into the context of a large sample (e.g., Nesvadba et al. 2008; Harrison et al. 2012; Cano-Díaz et al. 2012; Cresci et al. 2015; Genzel et al. 2014; Carniani et al. 2015). The first results of KASH z have already been obtained, investigating the galaxy-integrated [O III] or H α emission-line profiles of 89 $z = 0.57\text{--}1.70$ X-ray detected AGN. The parent population, and the targets that have been observed so far, are presented in an X-ray luminosity versus redshift plot in Fig. 8.7.

The initial KASH z observations have been used to constrain the prevalence of high-velocity ionised gas featured in the one-dimensional spectra of high-redshift AGN (see Figs. 8.8 and 8.9). This follows a similar approach to that already performed on the spectra of $z < 0.4$ AGN by Mullaney et al. (2013) (also see Chap. 4).

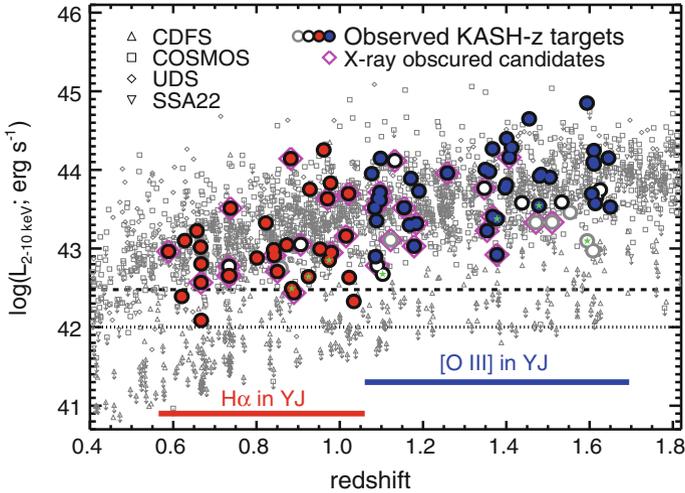
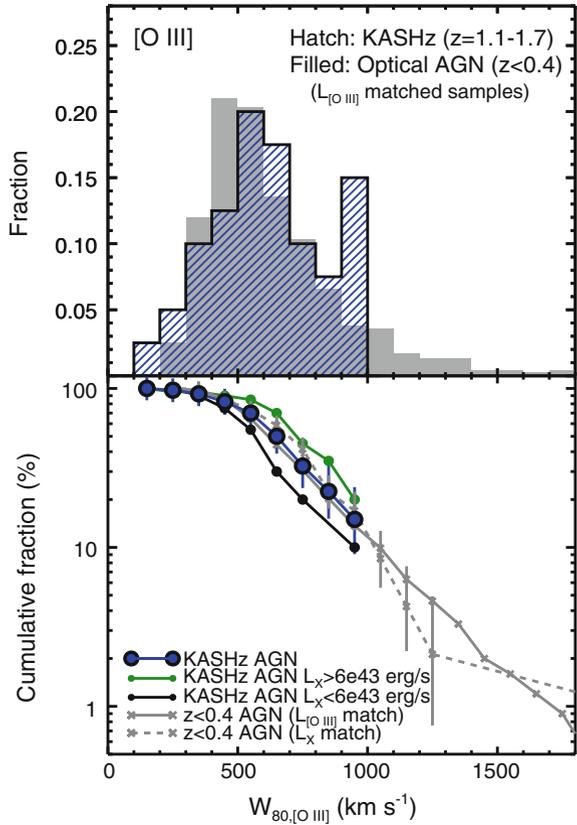


Fig. 8.7 Hard band X-ray luminosity (2–10 keV) versus redshift for the sources in the four deep fields covered by KASHz. The *dashed line* indicates our luminosity cut of $L_{2-10\text{keV}} > 3 \times 10^{42} \text{ erg s}^{-1}$ for the target selection in all fields, except for CDFS where we use $L_{2-10\text{keV}} > 10^{42} \text{ erg s}^{-1}$ (*dotted line*). The *circles* indicate the X-ray AGN that have been observed by KASHz so far. The *magenta diamonds* are the targets that are likely to be X-ray obscured. Overall the 89 targets cover three orders of magnitude in X-ray luminosity ($\approx 10^{42} - 10^{45} \text{ erg s}^{-1}$)

For the targets with measurements of the [O III] emission-line profiles we find that $\approx 60\%$ have line-widths indicative of ionised outflows (i.e., $W_{80} > 600 \text{ km s}^{-1}$; see Fig. 8.8 and see Chap. 4 for details of this particular parameterisation). The same conclusions applies when comparing $\text{H}\alpha$ emission-line widths (see Fig. 8.9). These results indicate that ionised outflows are common in the host galaxies of high-redshift AGN. Furthermore, when comparing the emission-line width distributions of the KASHz sample to a luminosity-matched sample of $z < 0.4$ AGN from Mullaney et al. (2013), we find that the two cosmic epochs are indistinguishable. This implies little evolution in the prevalence of AGN outflows (see Fig. 8.6), for AGN of the same luminosity.

The KASHz sample can also be compared to star-forming galaxies that do not host an AGN. This is thanks to a KMOS survey of ≈ 500 $z \approx 0.9$ star-forming galaxies performed by Stott et al. in prep. When comparing the $\text{H}\alpha$ emission-line widths of the two samples, we find that the KASHz sample has a much higher prevalence of high-velocity features (see Fig. 8.9). These results indicate that AGN may be crucial in driving the highest velocity outflows, in agreement with many model predictions (see Sect. 1.5.1).

Fig. 8.8 *Top panel* Histogram of emission-line widths (W_{80}) for the KASHz targets with [O III] measurements (hatched histogram). The *solid histogram* is a comparison sample of $z < 0.4$ AGN taken from Mullaney et al. (2013) (also see Chap. 4), which was randomly selected to have the same [O III] luminosity distribution as the KASHz sample. *Bottom panel* A cumulative distribution of the [O III] line-widths for the KASHz sample (*large circles*), and the luminosity-matched $z < 0.4$ comparison sample (crosses). The *low redshift* and *high redshift* samples are indistinguishable, indicating little evolution if high-velocity gas kinematics over cosmic time for a fixed luminosity

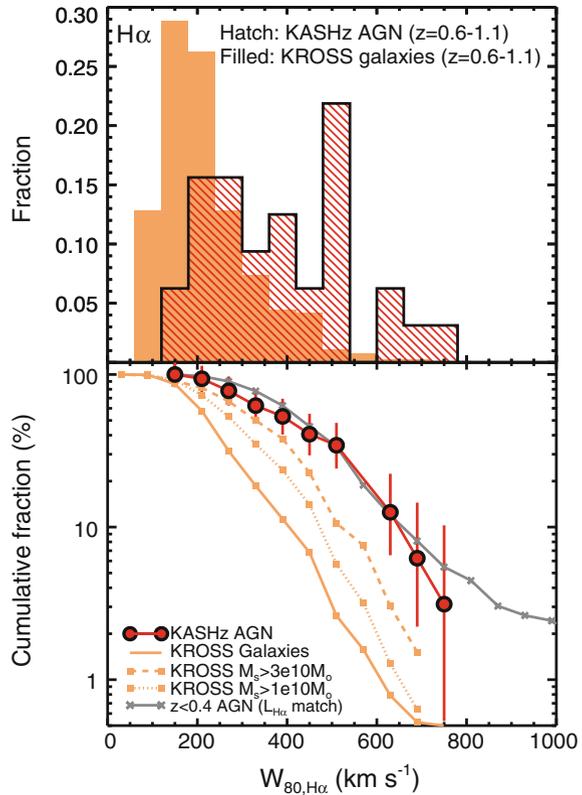


8.4 What Impact Do Outflows Have on Galaxy Evolution?

A key prediction of some theoretical models is that AGN inject energy or momentum into the gas in their host galaxies which results in either a suppression or enhancement of the star formation rate in their host galaxies (discussed in Sect. 1.5). In Chap. 6 of this thesis it was found that the average SFRs of AGN host galaxies are not appreciably different from the overall star forming galaxy population, even at high AGN luminosities (i.e., $L_{2-8 \text{ keV}} \gtrsim 10^{44} \text{ erg s}^{-1}$). This work has now been extended by our group in Stanley et al. 2015, where we measured the average SFRs of ≈ 2000 X-ray detected AGN with redshifts $z = 0.2-2.5$ (see Fig. 8.10). To do this, we utilised the SED methods described in Sect. 2.2, on infrared data from *Spitzer* and *Herschel*. This work explores the average SFRs as a function of both redshift and AGN luminosity with sufficient numbers of sources to explore these trends in detail. In agreement with the results presented in Chap. 6, little trend is observed between the average SFR and AGN luminosity; however, there is some evidence for a small increase in SFR for the most luminous AGN. In Stanley et al. (2015) we demonstrate that these results

Fig. 8.9 *Top panel*

Histogram of emission-line widths (W_{80}) for the KASHz targets with H α measurements (hatched histogram). The *solid histogram* is a comparison sample of ≈ 0.9 star-forming galaxies from Stott et al. (in prep). *Bottom panel* A cumulative distribution of the H α line-widths for the KASHz sample (*large circles*), a luminosity-matched $z < 0.4$ comparison sample (crosses; Mullaney et al. 2013) and the $z \approx 0.9$ star-forming galaxies. The *low redshift* and *high redshift* samples are indistinguishable, indicating little evolution in high-velocity gas kinematics over cosmic time for a fixed luminosity. However, the high-redshift star-forming galaxies show a lower fraction of high-velocity ionised gas kinematics compared to the AGN



are consistent with a simple model where AGN and SFR are intrinsically correlated when averaged over long timescales, which may be expected for a shared gas supply for these two processes. However, the X-rays that we observe are a measure of the *instantaneous* AGN luminosity, which is likely to be highly variable, and therefore the intrinsic correlation between SFR and AGN luminosity is washed out in our observations. How this is related to the model predictions of SFR suppression is an outstanding question.

Whilst the results presented in Chap. 6 and Fig. 8.10 are instructive the explore mean SFRs. A *mean* SFR only provides limited information as it does not tell you everything about the underlying SFR distribution. A more detailed approach, and a direct test for theoretical models, would be to measure the individual SFRs for a complete sample of AGN. This would result in SFR distributions that can be compared to non-AGN host galaxies and to model predictions. However, a significant challenge is that even the deepest *Herschel* observations only detect galaxies with the highest SFRs (i.e., typically above the “main sequence” described in Sect. 1.4.2), making it difficult to obtain good SFR measurements for the whole sample. Therefore, we have obtained ALMA observations to obtain continuum measurements of ≈ 100

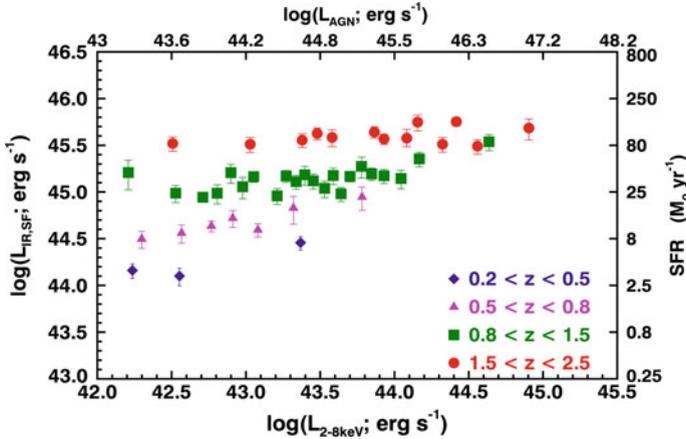


Fig. 8.10 Mean SFR versus AGN luminosity for ≈ 2000 X-ray detected AGN (figure from Stanley et al. 2015). The different symbols represent the different redshift ranges explored. These SFRs were calculated using the SEDs of these individual sources, decomposing the emission due to star formation and that from AGN activity. Although this work uses a much larger dataset and more rigorous techniques, the results are consistent with those presented in Chap. 6 of this thesis. That this, although SFR increases with redshift, there is little correlation between SFR and AGN luminosity. Stanley et al. (2015) suggested that any intrinsic correlations between these two quantities could be washed out due to the rapid variability of AGN luminosity compared to the more stable SFRs in individual sources

Herschel undetected AGN (2012.1.00869.S; PI: Mullaney and 2013.1.00884.S; PI: Alexander; e.g., Mullaney et al. 2015). These ALMA data are excellent for providing much the required constraints on the SFRs of individual AGN when included in the SED methods described in Sect. 2.2 (see Fig. 8.11). The main science results from this ALMA data will be published over the coming months.

Another challenge of extragalactic astronomy is to constrain the long-term impact of galaxy-wide outflows, such as those observed in Chaps. 3 and 4, on the evolution of their host galaxies. The results presented in Chap. 6 showed little evidence that luminous AGN are suppressing star formation, despite the fact the models prediction that these luminous AGN should drive outflows *and consequently* suppress star formation. Whilst observations have shown that galaxy-wide outflows are *potentially* expelling significant fractions of gas, due to the timescales involved ($\gtrsim 10$ Myrs) it is not possible to *directly* determine the ultimate fate of this gas or the overall impact that these outflows have on individual galaxies. To address this fundamental limitation, I will use the 3-dimensional velocity fields of the galaxies produced by the cosmological hydrodynamical simulation EAGLE (i.e., “mock” IFU observations; see Fig. 8.12) that has been developed in Durham and Leiden, to perform similar analyses to those used on the real IFU data. I will then compare these directly to the observations from the previous and ongoing observing programmes (see Fig. 8.6).

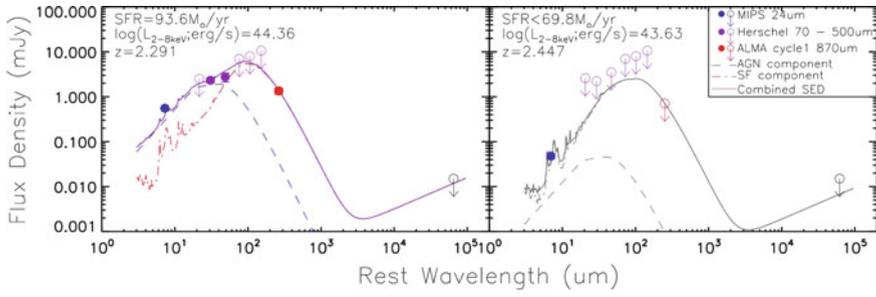


Fig. 8.11 Example SEDs of two high redshift X-ray detected AGN, with the inclusion of our new ALMA data at $870\mu\text{m}$ (from F. Stanley in prep.). The symbols show the data taken from *Spitzer*-MIPS, *Herschel*-PACS, *Herschel*-SPIRE and ALMA. The *solid lines* show the best-fits SEDs. In the *left panel*, the ALMA detection enables us to properly decompose the AGN emission (*dashed line*) from the star formation emission (*dot-dashed line*). Without the ALMA data this was not possible. In the *right panel*, the ALMA upper limit provides a much stronger constraint (by $\approx 5\times$) than the *Herschel* data. These examples show the significant improvements that ALMA data brings in measuring the SFRs of AGN

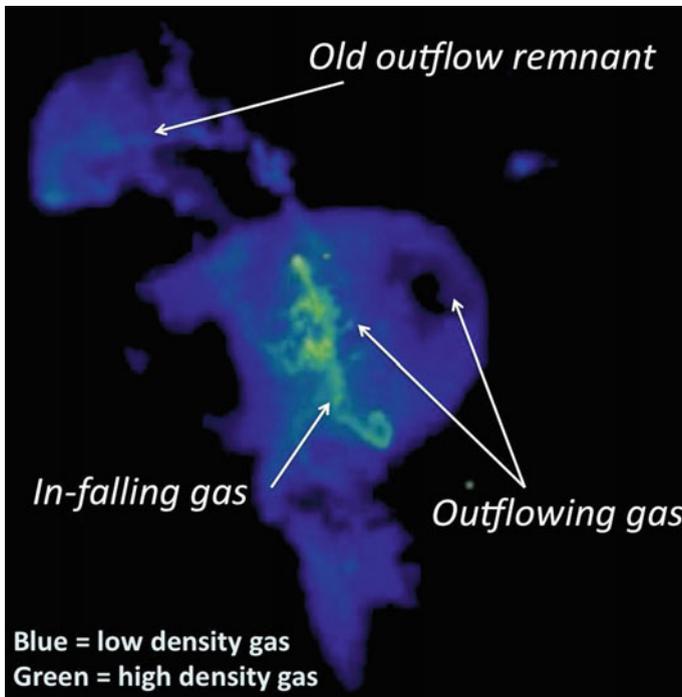


Fig. 8.12 A snap-shot of a 600kpc box around a galaxy undergoing an energetic outflow from a preliminary EAGLE run. The image is courtesy of R. Bower and the Virgo Consortium

Towards this goal I have also performed IFU observations with VLT/VIMOS (Project ID: 092.B-0062(A); PI: Harrison) of the targets in Chap. 4 that have outflows that appear to be extended beyond the Gemini/GMOS field of view (i.e., on greater than $5'' \times 3.''5$ scales). The VLT/VIMOS observations have a much larger field-of-view (i.e., $13'' \times 13''$) than Gemini/GMOS which means that I will have characterised the *full* kinematic structure of the outflows *for the whole sample* presented in Chap. 4 and I can then compare these data to the simulated outflows from EAGLE (see Fig. 8.12). By compiling the data from all of the observing programmes with the results from EAGLE, it will be possible to compare the gas kinematics of 100s of galaxies and AGN from simulations to observations that are well matched in resolution (i.e., $\approx 0.5\text{--}3$ kpc; see Fig. 8.12). Principally, I will assess whether the outflows that play a significant role in the evolution of the simulated galaxies have properties that match the observations.

8.5 Final Remarks

Over the last twenty-five years AGN have moved to the forefront of extragalactic astronomy research, largely due to theoretical predictions that state that AGN play a fundamental role in the evolution of massive galaxies. AGN are thought to inject energy and momentum into the gas in their host galaxies and the larger scale environment, although the details of how this occurs is still under debate. The observational data certainly suggests that some of the theoretical predictions are broadly correct. For example, at low redshift in low accretion-rate AGN, radio jets appear to be preventing the cooling of hot gas. Additionally, as demonstrated in this thesis, energetic galaxy-wide outflows can be found in the host galaxies of luminous AGN across a wide range of redshifts, in broad agreement with theoretical predictions. However, the physical drivers of these outflows and long-term impact that they have is still to be fully understood. Fundamentally, we lack a consensus view on whether luminous AGN are a universal requirement to create the properties of the galaxies and the IGM that we see around us today. As outlined in this chapter we have already embarked on an extensive programme making use of new facilities such as ALMA, VLA, e-MERLIN and KMOS to address many of the outstanding issues. Initial results show promising signs of what is to come. Furthermore, with revolutionary multi-wavelength observational facilities such as Astro-H, LSST, JWST, SKA and SPICA in the process of being developed we will soon have access to a considerable amount of even higher quality observational data covering X-ray to radio wavelengths. A careful utilisation of these data and comparison to cutting-edge theoretical models, should provide further detailed insight into *the influence of active galactic nuclei on the evolution of galaxies*.

References

- Aird, J., Nandra, K., Laird, E. S., et al. 2010, MNRAS, 401, 2531
- Cano-Díaz, M., Maiolino, R., Marconi, A., et al. 2012, A&A, 537, L8
- Carniani, S., Marconi, A., Maiolino, R., et al. 2015, A&A, 584, 78
- Cresci, G., Mainieri, V., Brusa, M., et al. 2015, ApJ, 799, 82
- Faucher-Giguère, C.-A., & Quataert, E. 2012, MNRAS, 425, 605
- Genzel, R., Förster Schreiber, N. M., Rosario, D., et al. 2014, ApJ, 796, 7
- Harrison, C. M., Alexander, D. M., Swinbank, A. M., et al. 2012, MNRAS, 426, 1073
- Kewley, L. J., Groves, B., Kauffmann, G., & Heckman, T. 2006, MNRAS, 372, 961
- King, A. 2003, ApJL, 596, L27
- Madau, P., & Dickinson, M. 2014, ARA&A, 52, 415
- McNamara, B. R., & Nulsen, P. E. J. 2012, New Journal of Physics, 14, 055023
- Mullaney, J. R., Alexander, D. M., Fine, S., et al. 2013, MNRAS, 433, 622
- Mullaney, J. R., Alexander, D. M., Aird, J., et al. 2015, MNRAS, 453, L83
- Nesvadba, N. P. H., Lehnert, M. D., De Breuck, C., Gilbert, A. M., & van Breugel, W. 2008, A&A, 491, 407
- Nesvadba, N. P. H., Lehnert, M. D., Eisenhauer, F., et al. 2006, ApJ, 650, 693
- Solórzano-Iñarrea, C., & Tadhunter, C. N. 2003, MNRAS, 340, 705
- Stanley, F., Harrison, C. M., Alexander, D. M., et al. 2015, MNRAS, 453, 591
- Tadhunter, C. N., Villar-Martin, M., Morganti, R., Bland-Hawthorn, J., & Axon, D. 2000, MNRAS, 314, 849
- Villar-Martín, M., Fosbury, R. A. E., Binette, L., Tadhunter, C. N., & Rocca-Volmerange, B. 1999, A&A, 351, 47
- Weymann, R. J., Morris, S. L., Foltz, C. B., & Hewett, P. C. 1991, ApJ, 373, 23

Appendix A

AGN Emission Lines: Some Relevant Information and Applications

This thesis makes extensive use of rest-frame optical emission lines to trace the ionised gas in AGN. Two types of emission lines are referred to throughout this thesis, *permitted lines* and *forbidden lines*. Permitted lines are those that have transition probabilities, such that the typical decay times by photon emission are very short ($\approx 10^{-8}$ s), and these lines can be produced in both high-density and low-density environments. In contrast, forbidden lines are transitions from meta-stable states and in high density environments these states are most likely to be collisionally de-excited (by another particle) before they are de-excited by photon emission. In short, there isn't sufficient time for a photon to be produced before the excited state is collisionally de-excited. In this appendix brief details of the production mechanisms of the main emission lines used in this thesis are provided. Details of how these lines are used to identify AGN and how they are used to derive physical properties of ionised outflows are also given.

A.1 Forbidden Emission Lines

The main forbidden emission-line used throughout this thesis is the doublet [O III] λ 4959,5007. The O III species is twice-ionised oxygen (i.e., two electrons are removed and the clearer notation that is used in chemistry is O^{2+}). The creation of O III by photoionization requires photons with $h\nu \geq 35.1$ eV and therefore it is preferentially found around sources of a hard (high energy) continuum. O III has 6 electrons, with two electrons in the 1 s sub-shell, two electrons in the 2 s sub-shell and two electrons in the 2p sub-shell (see Fig. A.1). The 2p sub-shell is partially filled (i.e., it only contains two of the six possible electrons). It is the two electrons moving between different configurations *within* the 2p sub-shell (i.e., moving between orbitals and changing spin) that is responsible for the production of the [O III] emission lines. These two electrons determine the possible electron quantum states of the O III ion.

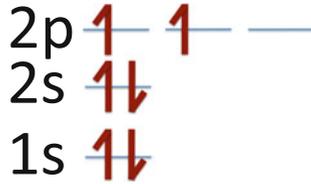


Fig. A.1 The electron orbitals for the six electrons in an O III ion. The electrons are represented as half arrows and the arrow direction corresponds to the electron spin. The blue horizontal lines represent the orbitals. The outer 2p sub-shell is only partially filled. These two electrons can be moved into higher-energy configurations of orbitals and spin by collisional excitation. When the ion de-excites back to a lower energy configuration, [O III] emission lines are produced. Figure A.2 shows an energy level diagram for O III

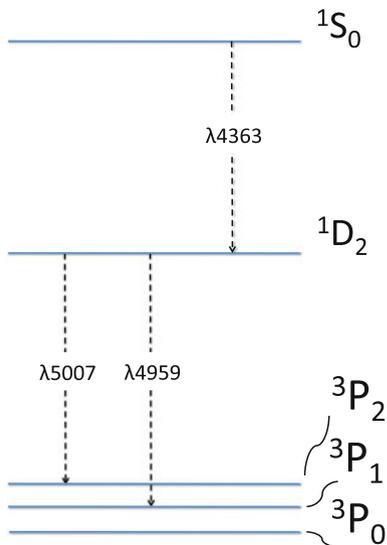
These different quantum states can be notated with the term-symbol:

$$^{2S+1}L_J \quad (\text{A.1.1})$$

where S is the spin quantum number, J is the total angular momentum quantum number and L is the orbital quantum number. L has standard labels for each value, the first of which are: “S” (for $L = 0$); “P” (for $L = 1$) and “D” (for $L = 2$). The values of L and S are determined by the sum of the corresponding individual quantum numbers of the two outer electrons (that are set by the orbitals that they are located in and their spins). In this ion the 2p sub-shell is less than half-filled (see Fig. A.1) which means that we can define $J = |L - S|$. Each combination of L and S results in a different energy level and, in the case where $(2S+1) > 1$, these levels are split further for each of the individual J values. An energy-level diagram for [O III] is shown in Fig. A.2. The electrons can be collisionally excited to higher energy levels and then the [O III] emission lines are emitted when the ion de-excites to a lower energy level. In low density environments (where collisional de-excitations are negligible), the relative number of [O III] λ 5007 photons and [O III] λ 4959 photons is set by the ratio of the probabilities associated with the transitions that produce them (i.e., =2.9; Osterbrock and Ferland 2006) and the result is the familiar [O III] λ 4959,5007 emission-line doublet with a flux ratio of 2.9 between the two components. In high density environments (i.e., electron densities $n_e \gtrsim 7 \times 10^5 \text{ cm}^{-3}$; Osterbrock and Ferland 2006), the 1D_2 excited state shown in Fig. A.2 is de-excited by collisions before it can be de-excited by photon production. This is why the [O III] λ 4959,5007 emission-line doublet is not produced in the high-density ($n_e \gtrsim 10^8 \text{ cm}^{-3}$) BLRs of AGN.

The N II ion (used for emission-line diagnostics, see Sect. A.3) has two electrons in the outer 2p sub-shell and consequently this ion has the same set of electron configurations as O III (see Fig. A.2), although the energy level of each configuration is different. The other forbidden emission lines used in this thesis are the two lines that make up the [S II] $\lambda\lambda$ 6716,6731 doublet. In the low density limit ($n_e \approx 1 \text{ cm}^{-3}$), every collisional excitation is followed by the emission of a photon, while in the high density limit ($n_e \gtrsim 10^5 \text{ cm}^{-3}$) collisional de-excitations dominate. Between the

Fig. A.2 Energy-level diagram for the lowest terms of [O III] for the $2p^2$ configuration (Fig. A.1). For clarity, the splitting of the 3P term has been exaggerated. Strong optical emission lines are shown by the *dotted lines*



two density regimes, the relative intensity of the [S II] $\lambda\lambda 6716,6731$ emission lines is a function of the electron density (and also temperature); therefore, for a fixed temperature the emission-line ratio [S II] $\lambda 6716$ /[S II] $\lambda 6731$ can be used as a tracer of electron density (Osterbrock and Ferland 2006). We use [S II] $\lambda\lambda 6716,6731$ as a measure of n_e in Chaps. 3 and 4.

A.2 Permitted Emission Lines

The two permitted emission lines that are used in this thesis are H α ($\lambda = 6563 \text{ \AA}$) and H β ($\lambda = 4861 \text{ \AA}$). These lines are part of the Balmer emission-line series that are produced when the single electron in a hydrogen atom transitions from a higher principle energy level to the second principle energy level (i.e., $n = 3-\infty$ to $n = 2$). H α and H β are produced due to the transitions from $n = 3$ and $n = 4$ respectively. In the context of emission-line regions in AGN (and other “nebulae”; Osterbrock and Ferland 2006), these lines are referred to as recombination lines. In the emission-line regions of AGN (where there are plenty of photons with $h\nu \geq 13.6\text{eV}$), electrons are constantly being removed and re-combined with hydrogen nuclei. During re-combination, an electron is captured into an excited state and the electron consequently cascades down the energy levels. The photons emitted during this process are the “recombination lines”.¹

¹In AGN NLRs H α also has a small contribution from collisional excitation to the $n = 3$ level. This is why the intrinsic Balmer decrement is approximately $H\alpha/H\beta = 3.1$ and is in excess of the recombination-only value of 2.85 (Osterbrock and Ferland 2006).

A.3 BPT Diagram

The relative ratios of different emission lines can be used to identify the continuum ionising source (as discussed in Sect. 1.2.3). AGN have a high level of photoelectric heating, and also an ability to liberate high ionisation potential electrons, due to their hard radiation field (i.e., they produce significant emission with short wavelengths; Fig. 1.2). The increased gas temperature means that collisionally excited forbidden lines become stronger (e.g., [O III] and [N II]; see Sect. A.1). The ratio of these forbidden lines to recombination lines (Sect. A.2) is consequently higher in the presence of an AGN compared to emission-line regions that do not host an AGN. This means that several different emission-line ratio diagnostics, applied to the spectra of galaxies, can be used to identify AGN activity. The most popular of these is the Baldwin-Phillips-Terlevich diagram (BPT diagram; Baldwin et al. 1981; also see Veilleux and Osterbrock 1987) which uses the ratios $[\text{N II}]\lambda 6583/\text{H}\alpha$ and $[\text{O III}]\lambda 5007/\text{H}\beta$ (Fig. 1.3). The close wavelengths of the pairs of lines in these ratios means that differential dust reddening is minimal. The boundaries to isolate AGN on the BPT diagram have been created both from modelling (of the ionization conditions and using stellar population synthesis; e.g., Kewley et al. 2001) and from empirical methods (e.g., Ho et al. 1997; Kauffmann et al. 2003).

A.4 Gas Masses, Mass Outflow Rates and Energy Injection Rates

Recombination lines are useful to give an estimate of the ionised gas mass in the emission-line region of an AGN, under certain assumptions. In Chap. 4 we use the $\text{H}\beta$ line to estimate the ionised gas mass and, therefore, we give a brief explanation of how this can be achieved here. Firstly, under the assumption of pure hydrogen that is fully ionised, we can estimate an ionised gas mass (M) with,

$$M = n_e m_p V \varepsilon, \quad (\text{A.4.1})$$

where n_e is the electron density, m_p is the mass of the proton, V is the total volume, and ε is the filling factor. Here the filling factor is the fraction of the total volume that contributes to the mass (i.e. if the volume is made up of “clumps” rather than being a uniform distribution). Under “Case B” conditions (e.g., Osterbrock and Ferland 2006), the gas is assumed to be optically thick to ionising photons and recombinations are only considered to the excited states. All recombinations to the ground state result in photons that are immediately absorbed by a nearby atom and the total number of ionising photons is in balance with the re-combinations to excited levels. Under these assumptions, the relative intensities of different recombination lines can be calculated and each recombination line has a resultant, temperature dependent,

“effective recombination coefficient” (α^{eff} ; e.g., Osterbrock and Ferland 2006). Assuming uniform temperature the luminosity of the H β recombination line can then be expressed as

$$L_{\text{H}\beta} = n_e n_p \alpha_{\text{H}\beta}^{\text{eff}} h \nu_{\text{H}\beta} V \varepsilon \quad (\text{A.4.2})$$

Combining Eq. A.4.1 with Eq. A.4.2 results in an estimate of the (H β emitting) ionised hydrogen gas mass of,

$$M = \frac{L_{\text{H}\beta} m_p}{n_e \alpha_{\text{H}\beta}^{\text{eff}} h \nu_{\text{H}\beta}}, \quad (\text{A.4.3})$$

that can be expressed in the convenient form,

$$\frac{M}{6.78 \times 10^8 M_{\odot}} = \left(\frac{L_{\text{H}\beta}}{10^{43} \text{ erg s}^{-1}} \right) \left(\frac{n_e}{100 \text{ cm}^{-3}} \right)^{-1}, \quad (\text{A.4.4})$$

which uses the assumption that $\alpha_{\text{H}\beta}^{\text{eff}} = 3.03 \times 10^{-14} \text{ cm}^3 \text{ s}^{-1}$ (applicable for Case B conditions and $T = 10^4 \text{ K}$; Osterbrock and Ferland 2006).

In Chap. 4 we assume a spherical outflow to estimate values of the rate of kinetic energy in the outflows (\dot{E}) and the mass outflow rates (\dot{M}). The derivation of the equations used in this chapter are given here. For a spherical outflow of fully ionised hydrogen the mass outflow rate is

$$\dot{M} = n_e m_p v_{\text{out}} A \varepsilon \quad (\text{A.4.5})$$

where v_{out} is the outflow velocity and A is the surface area. Substituting in Eq. A.4.1 and the values of A and V for a sphere, results in a mass outflow rate of

$$\dot{M} = \frac{3M v_{\text{out}}}{r} \quad (\text{A.4.6})$$

We can then combine the bulk outflow kinetic energy rate with the turbulent kinetic energy rate to get a total kinetic energy rate of

$$\dot{E} = \frac{\dot{M}}{2} (v_{\text{out}}^2 + 3\sigma^2), \quad (\text{A.4.7})$$

where σ is the velocity dispersion.

In Chaps. 3 and 4 we model the outflow as an energy conserving bubble, expanding into a uniform medium. This model was applied to make a direct comparison to previous work that used the same model (e.g., Nesvadba et al. 2008; Greene et al. 2012). The details of the derivation are too long to be provided here, but can be found in Castor et al. (1975); see Weaver et al. (1977) and Veilleux et al. (2005) for more detail. In summary, a wind that provides a constant supply of energy, forms a hot shocked cavity that sweeps up a bubble (or shell) of shocked interstellar medium.

This bubble is then driven into the ambient interstellar medium. If radiative losses of the overall outflow are negligible the expanding bubble is energy conserving. Here we provide the derivation of Eq. A.4.7 (used in Chaps. 3 and 4), starting with Equation (51) of Weaver et al. (1977) that describes the evolution of the radius, $r(t)$, of such an energy-conserving expanding bubble. This equation can be written in the form,

$$r(t) = 1.07 n_0^{-1/5} \dot{E}_{44}^{1/5} t_6^{3/5} \text{ kpc}, \quad (\text{A.4.8})$$

where t_6 is the age of the bubble in Myr, n_0 is the ambient density ahead of the expanding bubble in units of cm^{-3} and \dot{E}_{44} is the energy injection rate of the wind in units of $10^{44} \text{ erg s}^{-1}$ (here we are assuming that none of the energy injected by the wind is radiated away; see e.g., Veilleux et al. 2005). Differentiating this equation results in the following expression for the velocity of the expanding shell,

$$v(t) = 640 \dot{E}_{44}^{1/5} n_0^{-1/5} t_6^{-2/5} \text{ km s}^{-1} \quad (\text{A.4.9})$$

Substituting Eq. A.4.8 into Eq. A.4.9 we can then write the shell velocity as

$$v(t) = 670 \dot{E}_{44}^{1/3} n_0^{-1/3} r_{\text{kpc}}^{-2/3} \text{ km s}^{-1} \quad (\text{A.4.10})$$

Finally, rearranging Eq. A.4.10 results in an expression for the energy injection rate of the expanding bubble of,

$$\dot{E} \approx 3 \times 10^{46} r_{10 \text{ kpc}}^2 v_{1000 \text{ km s}^{-1}}^3 n_0 \text{ erg s}^{-1}, \quad (\text{A.4.11})$$

The true energy injection rate will need to be multiplied by the covering factor of the bubble ($\Omega/4\pi$; see Greene et al. 2012), although we have neglected this factor in this work (see Sect. 4.5.3).

References

- Baldwin, J. A., Phillips, M. M., & Terlevich, R. 1981, *PASP*, 93, 5
 Castor, J., McCray, R., & Weaver, R. 1975, *ApJL*, 200, L107
 Greene, J. E., Zakamska, N. L., & Smith, P. S. 2012, *ApJ*, 746, 86
 Ho, L. C., Filippenko, A. V., & Sargent, W. L. W. 1997, *APJS*, 112, 315
 Kauffmann, G., Heckman, T. M., Tremonti, C., et al. 2003, *MNRAS*, 346, 1055
 Kewley, L. J., Dopita, M. A., Sutherland, R. S., Heisler, C. A., & Trevena, J. 2001, *ApJ*, 556, 121
 Nesvadba, N. P. H., Lehnert, M. D., De Breuck, C., Gilbert, A. M., & van Breugel, W. 2008, *A&A*, 491, 407

- Osterbrock, D. E., & Ferland, G. J. 2006, *Astrophysics of gaseous nebulae and active galactic nuclei*
- Spergel, D. N., Verde, L., Peiris, H. V., et al. 2003, *APJS*, 148, 175
- Veilleux, S., Cecil, G., & Bland-Hawthorn, J. 2005, *ARAA*, 43, 769
- Veilleux, S., & Osterbrock, D. E. 1987, *APJS*, 63, 295
- Weaver, R., McCray, R., Castor, J., Shapiro, P., & Moore, R. 1977, *ApJ*, 218, 377

Appendix B

Assumed Cosmology

This thesis covers observations of extragalactic objects across a wide range of redshifts. A cosmological model, with a set of parameters, has been assumed throughout to convert the measured quantities of flux, redshift and angular size into luminosities and physical sizes. This appendix provides an extremely brief outline of: (1) the assumed cosmological model; (2) the values of the cosmological parameters adopted; (3) how the derived quantities are determined using this cosmological model and set of parameters.

B.1 The Model

We assume an expanding, homogeneous and isotropic universe where the scale factor $a(t)$ is used to describe the rate at which the Universe is expanding. The space-time separation between two events can be described by

$$ds^2 = c^2 dt^2 - a(t)^2 \left(\frac{dr^2}{1 - k(r/R)^2} + r^2 d\Omega^2 \right), \quad d\Omega^2 = d\theta^2 + \sin^2 \theta d\phi^2 \quad (\text{B.1.1})$$

where (t, r, θ, ϕ) are the co-moving co-ordinates, $k = \pm 1, 0$ and c is the speed of light. If we assume photons (that have $ds = 0$) are moving radially (i.e., $d\Omega = 0$), it can be shown that light is effectively redshifted by the expansion of the Universe. For a photon emitted with wavelength λ_e at time t_e the observed wavelength λ_o at time t_o is related to the scale factor as,

$$\frac{\lambda_o}{\lambda_e} = \frac{a(t_o)}{a(t_e)} \equiv (1 + z) \quad (\text{B.1.2})$$

where z is defined as the cosmological redshift. Cosmological redshifts for extragalactic objects are quoted throughout this thesis. These redshifts have been

predominantly been derived using the observed wavelengths (λ_o) of emission lines and following Eq. B.1.2.

The evolution of the scale factor can be described by Friedmann's Equations which follow,

$$\left(\frac{\dot{a}}{a}\right)^2 = H^2 = \frac{8\pi G}{3} \rho - \frac{kc^2}{a^2} + \frac{\Lambda c^2}{3} \quad (\text{B.1.3})$$

$$\frac{\ddot{a}}{a} = \dot{H} + H^2 = -\frac{4\pi G}{3} \left(\rho + \frac{3p}{c^2}\right) + \frac{\Lambda c^2}{3} \quad (\text{B.1.4})$$

where ρ is the density of the Universe, k is related to the curvature, p is the pressure, G is the gravitational constant, c is the speed of light and Λ is the cosmological constant. The value of ρ can be split into matter density $\rho_m \propto a^{-3}$ and photon density $\rho_r \propto a^{-4}$. If non-zero and positive, the last terms (i.e., those involving Λ) imply a “negative pressure” or “dark energy”. It is convenient to define $H_0^2 = 8\pi G \rho_c / 3$, where ρ_c is called the “critical density” (which assumes $k = \Lambda = 0$ in Eq. B.1.3) and to parameterise Eq. B.1.3 as

$$H^2 = \left(\frac{\dot{a}}{a}\right)^2 = H_0^2 \left(\frac{\Omega_m}{a^3} + \frac{\Omega_r}{a^4} + \frac{\Omega_k}{a^2} + \Omega_\Lambda\right) = H_0^2 E(a)^2 \quad (\text{B.1.5})$$

where $\Omega_m = \rho_m / \rho_c$, $\Omega_r = \rho_r / \rho_c$, $\Omega_k = -c^2 k / H_0^2$ and $\Omega_\Lambda = \Lambda c^2 / 3H_0^2$. These constants (or density parameters) tells us how much matter, radiation, curvature and the cosmological constant contribute to the total density at the current epoch. Their values, along with the value of H_0 , are important for deriving quantities associated with extragalactic objects that depend on the value of the scale factor (e.g., their luminosities, ages, physical sizes; see next section). These values are determined experimentally by combining observations of the cosmic microwave background, Type 1a supernovae and the matter power spectrum. In this thesis we assume that $H_0 = 71 \text{ km s}^{-1} \text{ Mpc}^{-1}$, $\Omega_M = 0.27$, $\Omega_\Lambda = 0.73$, $k = 0$ and that Ω_r is negligible (following Spergel et al. 2003).

B.2 Cosmic Time and Distances

The two main measurements that are dependent on the assumed cosmology in this thesis are:

- The (proper) *physical diameters* that are derived from measured angular sizes on the sky and redshifts.
- The *luminosities* that are derived from measured fluxes and redshifts.

Brief details of how these quantities are related to the assumed cosmology are provided here.

At the time an object emits light, the proper distance to an object is $a_e r_e$, where r_e is the co-moving distance and is defined as (follows from Eq. B.1.1),

$$r_e = \int_0^{r_e} \frac{dr}{\sqrt{1 - kr^2}} \quad (\text{B.2.1})$$

Consequently, the physical diameter l is related to the angular size θ by

$$a_e r_e = l / \theta \quad (\text{B.2.2})$$

We define the *angular diameter distance* (d_A) of an observed object with known l and measured θ as

$$d_A \equiv l / \theta \quad (\text{B.2.3})$$

where it now follows that $d_A = r_e a_e$ and this distance can be derived for an assumed cosmology and measured redshift (see Sect. B.1). The values of physical sizes of the outflows in this thesis are derived following Eq. B.2.3.

The observed flux (F_o) is the amount of photon energy (E_o) passing through a unit area per unit time interval (Δt_o) and can be expressed as

$$F_o = \frac{E_o}{\Delta t_o} \frac{1}{4\pi (a_o r_o)^2} \quad (\text{B.2.4})$$

$$= \frac{E_e}{(1+z)^2 \Delta t_e} \frac{1}{4\pi (1+z)^2 (a_e r_e)^2} \quad (\text{B.2.5})$$

$$= \frac{L}{4\pi (1+z)^4 (a_e r_e)^2} \quad (\text{B.2.6})$$

where emitted quantities and observed quantities have been related following Sect. B.1. The *luminosity distance* (d_L) is defined as

$$F_o = \frac{L}{4\pi d_L^2} \quad (\text{B.2.7})$$

where L is the luminosity of the emitting object. It can now be seen that

$$d_L = (1+z)^2 a_e r_e = (1+z)^2 d_A \quad (\text{B.2.8})$$

Luminosities quoted in this thesis are derived from the measured fluxes and redshifts, following Eq. B.2.7.

Finally, following Eq. B.1.5, the age of the Universe at a certain redshift, $t_A(z)$, can be determined by,

$$H_0 t_A(z) = \int_0^{t_A} H_0 dt = \int_0^a \frac{da}{aE(a)} = \int_z^\infty \frac{dz}{(1+z)E(z)} \quad (\text{B.2.9})$$

Appendix C

Acronyms

2dFGRS	Two-degree-Field Galaxy Redshift Survey
2QZ	The 2dF QSO Redshift Survey
ACS	Advanced Camera for Surveys
AGN	Active Galactic Nuclei
ALMA	Atacama Large Millimeter/submillimeter Array
BALQSO	Broad Absorption Line Quasi-Stellar Object
BH	Black Hole
BLR	Broad Line Region
BPT	Baldwin-Phillips-Terlevich
C-COSMOS	Chandra COSMOS
CDF-N	Chandra Deep Field-North
CDF-S	Chandra Deep Field-South
COSMOS	COSMOlogical evolution Survey
DR7	Data Release 7
EAGLE	Evolution of GaLaxies and their Environment
E-CFDS	Extended-Chandra Deep Field South
e-MERLIN	Enhanced Multi-Element Radio Linked Interferometer Network
ESA	European Space Agency
ESO	European Southern Observatory
FIR	Far Infrared
FIRST	Faint Images of the Radio Sky
FMOS	Fibre Multi-Object Spectrograph
FWHM	Full Width at Half Maximum
GALPAKA	Galaxy and AGN Line Profile And Kinematic Analysis
GMOS	Gemini Multi-Object Spectrograph
GOODS	Great Observatories Origins Deep Survey
GOODS-N	GOODS-North
GOODS-S	GOODS-South
GRASIL	GRAphite and SILicate

GT	Guaranteed Time
HerMES	Herschel Multi-tiered Extragalactic Survey
HIPE	Herschel Interactive Processing Environment
HST	Hubble Space Telescope
HzRGs	High Redshift Radio Galaxies
ICM	IntraCluster Medium
IDL	Interactive Data Language
IFS	Integral Field Spectroscopy
IFU	Integral Field Unit
IGM	InterGalactic Medium
IMF	Initial Mass Function
IR	InfraRed
IRAF	Image Reduction and Analysis Facility
IRAM	Institut de Radioastronomie Millimetrique
IRAS	InfraRed Astronomical Satellite
ISM	InterStellar Medium
JVLA	(Karl G.) Jansky Very Large Array
JWST	James Webb Space Telescope
KMOS	K-band Multi-Object Spectrograph
LINER	Low-Ionization Nuclear Emission-line Region
LIRG	Luminous InfraRed Galaxy
LSST	Large Synoptic Survey Telescope
MDO	Massive Dark Object
MIR	Mid Infrared
MMIRS	MMT Magellan Infrared Spectrograph
MMT	Multiple Mirror Telescope
MOSFIRE	Multi-Object Spectrometer For Infra-Red Exploration
MS	Main Sequence
NFW	Navarro-Frenk-White
NICMOS	Near Infrared Camera and Multi-Object Spectrometer
NIFS	Near Infrared Integral Field Spectrometer
NIR	Near InfraRed
NLR	Narrow Line Region
NRAO	National Radio Astronomy Observatory
NVSS	NRAO VLA Sky Survey
PA	Position Angle
PdBI	Plateau de Bure Interferometer
PSF	Point Spread Function
QSO	Quasi-Stellar Object
SB	StarBurst
SCANPI	SCAN Processing and Integration
SDSS	Sloan Digital Sky Survey
SED	Spectral Energy Distribution
SF	Star Formation
SFR	Star Formation Rate

SINFONI	Spectrograph for Integral Field Observations in the Near Infrared
SKA	Square Kilometre Array
SMBH	Super Massive Black Hole
SMG	SubMillimetre Galaxy
SPICA	SPace Infrared telescope for Cosmology and Astrophysics
SPIRE	Spectral and Photometric Imaging REceiver
sSFR	Specific Star Formation Rate
UDS	Ultra Deep Survey
ULIRG	Ultra-Luminous Infrared Galaxy
VIMOS	Visible Multi-Object Spectrograph
VLA	Very Large Array
VLT	Very Large Telescope
WISE	Wide-field Infrared Survey Explorer
XMM	X-ray Multi-Mirror Mission

Index

A

- Accretion, 3, 5
 - disk, 7
 - energy, 21
 - luminosity, 5, 10
- Active galactic nuclei
 - definition, 3
 - demography, 13
 - discovery, 2
 - infrared emission, 8, 12, 43
 - radio emission, 8, 13, 85, 127, 160
 - spectral energy distribution, 4
 - star formation rates, 16, 26, 145
 - type 1, 2
 - type 2, 2, 9
 - unified model, 4
 - x-ray emission, 7, 12, 164
- Active galactic nuclei feedback, 20
- Angular diameter distance, 185
- Angular size, 185
- Arc frames, 42

B

- Black hole, 3
 - black hole–bulge mass relationship, 18
 - cosmic space density, 15
 - masses, 18
- Bolometric correction, 10
- Bolometric luminosity, 10
- BPT diagram, 11, 160, 178
- Broad absorption line quasars, 162
- Broad-line region, 8

C

- Collisional de-excitation, 175
- Collisional excitation, 176
- Cosmic time, 185
- Cosmological model, 183
- Cosmological parameters, 184

D

- Dark frames, 42
- Data cube, 38

E

- EAGLE, 171
- Eddington luminosity, 6
- Eddington ratio, 6
- Emission lines
 - forbidden, 175, 177
 - production, 175
 - profiles, 24
- Emission-line regions, 8, 102
- Energy level, 176
- Energy outflow rate, 178
- Escape velocity, 76

F

- Feedback, 19, 21
- Feeding, 19
- Fibre (IFS), 39
- Flat-field frames, 42
- Flux calibration, 43

G

Galaxy, 1
Galaxy mergers, 69, 104
GMOS, 41, 89

H

Herschel, 146
High-redshift radio galaxies, 51
Hydrogen alpha ($H\alpha$)
 production, 177
 uses, 9, 178
Hydrogen beta ($H\beta$)
 production, 177
 uses, 9, 178

I

Image slicer, 39
Infrared surveys, 12
Integral field spectroscopy, 38
Integral field unit, 39

K

KMOS, 41, 166

L

Lenslet, 39
Long-slit spectroscopy, 37
Luminosity distance, 185

M

Main sequence, 16
Maintenance mode, 21, 22
Massive dark objects, 3
Mass outflow rate, 178
Mechanical energy, 7, 21

N

Narrow-line region, 9
NIFS, 41, 51
Nitrogen II ion ($[N II]$)
 production, 176
 uses, 9, 178
Non-parametric velocities, 94

O

Outflow, 22, 23
 bubble, 179

energetics, 178
mass, 178
molecular, 24, 164
spherical, 179
Oxygen III ion ($[O III]$)
 production, 175
 uses, 9, 24, 178

P

Photoionization, 175

Q

Quasar, 2
Quasar mode, 22, 126

R

Radiative energy, 6
Radiatively efficient, 6
Radio excess, 13, 93, 162
Radio jets, 8, 21, 126
Radio loud, 7, 8
Radio mode, 6, 21, 22, 126
Radio quiet, 6
Radio surveys, 13
Redshift, 183

S

Seyfert galaxies, 2, 9
SINFONI, 40, 51
Spectral energy distribution, 4
 infrared, 43
Stacking analyses, 147
Star formation
 cosmic space density, 15
 enhancement, 23
 infrared emission, 8, 43
 suppression, 22, 144
Star formation rates
 active galactic nuclei, 16, 26, 145
 measurements, 45, 147
Starburst mode, 22
Stellar winds, 23
Sub-millimetre galaxies (SMGs), 48
Supermassive black hole, 3
Supernovae winds, 23

T

Torus, 7, 43

U

Ultra-luminous infra-red galaxies, [48](#)

V

Variability, [152](#)

VIMOS, [41](#), [131](#)

W

Winds

active galactic nuclei, [24](#)

stellar, [23](#)

supernovae, [23](#)

X

X-ray cavities, [21](#), [138](#)

X-ray surveys, [11](#)